

# **The Bible Home Instructor**

A Bible Reading For The Home Fireside,

AND

The Bible Made Easy

EIGHTH EDITION

"The Entrance of Thy words giveth light," **Psalm 119:130.**

A Grouping Together  
Of Bible Testimony  
On All Subjects Of  
Sacred Interest And Importance

BY ANDREW N. DUGGER

Assisted by P. A. Nugent and Herbert Miles

Edited by **Kerry L. Barger** in **2018**

ISBN: 979-8-734-97661-6

[Printed books and E-books available at [Amazon](https://www.amazon.com) and [Lulu.com](https://www.lulu.com)]



## Foreword

"The Bible Home Instructor" is a classic Bible study guide, originally published in 1920. Written from a non-technical perspective, it is a compilation of Bible testimony on a multitude of Christian subjects. Each of the many biblical topics encapsulates one or more doctrinal truths, as understood and explained by the original author, Andrew N. Dugger.

In 1995, I assisted ministerial author, Richard C. Nickels, in creating an updated edition of this popular Bible study guide. For all of us who participated in this project, it was a work of love. The book was subsequently published in 1996 and reprinted by Giving and Sharing, a non-profit organization Nickels founded in 1978. That printed version is still being sold, and oftentimes at exorbitant prices. Mr. Nickels no doubt views such business practices as repugnant, just as I do. In order to counter this price-gouging trend with regard to Andrew Dugger's popular study guide, I have decided to publish this updated edition and sell it for the cost of printing. If the current price of this printed book is still prohibitive, I also offer a free PDF through my online bookstore at [www.lulu.com/spotlight/KerryBarger](http://www.lulu.com/spotlight/KerryBarger) which can be copied and shared freely among any number of people.

Richard Nickels has also written and published numerous other articles and books for the Giving & Sharing Bookstore, a non-profit mail order library that serves Christians around the world. His publications include Biblical Health and Healing, Biblical Marriage and Family, Six Papers on the History of the Church of God, Biblical Holy Days, Biblical Law, Biblical Doctrine, and many more.

This book is now in the public domain. I decided to make some needed formatting changes and reorder the chapters to enhance the clarity and content of the text. The study text is divided into sixteen separate lessons, each one of which should adequately fill an hourly Bible study/discussion session. In keeping with Andrew Dugger's time-tested format, the sequencing of the original subject matter was unaltered. Some additional editing was also needed. The Topical Index found at the end of the previous edition was essentially a duplicated rearrangement of the Table of Contents, and for that reason it has been deleted.

This eighth edition was designed to enhance the flow of the original

text and has been reorganized in a more natural way that should be more familiar to modern readers than any previous editions. Numerous grammatical errors and a few noted typos have also been corrected. Nevertheless, the original text that was included in the 1996 edition has essentially remained unchanged, except when absolutely essential. Case in point, the previous edition referenced the Topical Index at the end of the book in at least two instances. That Topical Index was not included in this eighth edition for the reason stated above. Those references now refer the reader to the appropriate lesson listed in the revised Table of Contents.

In 1920, the author used the common vernacular of his day. Some of the terms and expressions in use at that time are no longer considered politically correct. For example, when referring to people of African descent, he used the outdated expression, "the colored man", which is now regarded as an offensive idiom by many Americans. Despite how such expressions may now be viewed when written or verbalized in our 21st century, I have not made any changes merely to "modernize" the language commonly used in that time period. It was scholarly appropriate for all literature written in the early twentieth century. What Andrew Dugger wrote in "The Bible Home Instructor" continues to be relevant for Christians today, but every reader must bear in mind the antiquity of the original text. It was written and published over a century ago -- two and a half decades before the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls.

"These [Bereans] were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily." --Acts 17:11. Every Christian should seriously consider these words, in addition to those penned by the Apostle Paul, when he wrote: "Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth." --2 Timothy 2:15. Whether conducting your own personal Bible study or leading a Bible study group, "The Bible Home Instructor" can be utilized in any number of simple and effective ways to shed the precious light of God's truth into your life and the lives of all who take its teachings to heart. --Kerry L. Barger

## **Editor's Note**

In its various editions, The Bible Home Instructor has probably advanced the cause of the Church of God (Seventh Day) more than any other effort. The first edition was published in 1920. It may have been an expansion of an earlier publication, "The Bible Student's Assistant," offered as early as 1871. Distribution of The Bible Home Instructor in the 1920s led to substantial growth in the Church of God. Andrew N. Dugger continued to publish the book until his death in 1975.

With this edition, we have omitted the photographs from the seventh edition, because of their poor print quality. However, at the end of this book, we have preserved some of the line drawings which were sprinkled throughout the book. We have attempted to correct many of the typographical errors contained in earlier editions, which was a very time-consuming task.

The preservation of this classic book on the doctrines of the Church of God (Seventh Day) has been a project of a number of individuals. I extend special thanks to Kerry Barger, Carol Billigmeier, Curtis Garner, Jeffrey Vanek, as well as my wife Shirley, and daughter Amanda. We are grateful to them, and trust that their work has not been in vain. May the Eternal guide you as you study His Word.

-- Richard C. Nickels  
3316 Alberta Drive  
Gillette, Wyoming 82718  
(307) 686-5191

## **How to Obtain a Copy of This Book**

This book is in the public domain. Printed copies of the previous edition are still available, and the Giving & Sharing Bookstore at [www.giveshare.org](http://www.giveshare.org) offers a free text download. For additional information, please write to:

**Giving & Sharing**  
**PO Box 100**  
**Neck City, MO 64849**  
**United States of America**

## Table of Contents

<u>Section</u>	<u>Page</u>
<b>Preface.....</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>A Brief History of the Bible.....</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>The Word Of God</b>	
<b>The Bible Authors</b>	
<b>Ancient Manuscripts</b>	
<b>Original Writing And Translations</b>	
<b>The Bible in Remote Time</b>	
<b>The First Burning of Bibles</b>	
<b>Burning Of Bibles Again</b>	
<b>The Holy Bible To The World</b>	
<b>History of the Waldenses.....</b>	<b>17</b>
<b>Sabbath Observers</b>	
<b>Life and Doctrine of the Waldenses</b>	
<b>Pioneers of the Reformation.....</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>John Wycliffe</b>	
<b>John Huss</b>	
<b>Lesson 1.....</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>Search the Scriptures</b>	
<b>Creation and the Creator</b>	
<b>Walking in the Light</b>	
<b>How to Learn and Know the Truth</b>	
<b>Life and Death</b>	
<b>Searching the Scriptures</b>	
<b>The Sure Word of Prophecy</b>	
<b>Prophecies Relating to Christ's Birth</b>	
<b>Redemption</b>	
<b>Faith</b>	
<b>Repentance</b>	
<b>Conversion</b>	
<b>Confession</b>	
<b>Lesson 2.....</b>	<b>45</b>
<b>Sufferings of Christ</b>	
<b>Salvation Only Through Christ</b>	
<b>God's Willingness to Forgive</b>	
<b>Forgiving One Another</b>	
<b>Unbelief</b>	
<b>Holy and Sanctified</b>	
<b>Baptism</b>	
<b>Growth in Grace</b>	
<b>Lesson 3.....</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>Our Words</b>	

<b>Danger of Covetousness</b>	
<b>Purity</b>	
<b>Riches</b>	
<b>Duties of Parents and Children</b>	
<b>Child Training</b>	
<b>Promises for the Children</b>	
<b>Meditation and Prayer</b>	
<b>Answer to Prayer</b>	
<b>Importance of Prayer</b>	
<b>Lesson 4.....</b>	<b>75</b>
<b>What is Sin and Who are Sinners?</b>	
<b>The Law of God</b>	
<b>The Ten Commandments</b>	
<b>The Two Laws Contrasted</b>	
<b>Importance of Sound Doctrine</b>	
<b>Sin Defined</b>	
<b>Lesson 5.....</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>The Lord's Day</b>	
<b>Sabbath Observance</b>	
<b>The Crime of the Dark Ages</b>	
<b>The Lord's Day [cont'd.]</b>	
<b>The Jewish Sabbath and Mosaical Law Abolished</b>	
<b>New Testament Sabbath</b>	
<b>Time of Crucifixion</b>	
<b>The Master's Sign</b>	
<b>The Resurrection of Christ</b>	
<b>The Lord's Supper</b>	
<b>Lesson 6.....</b>	<b>103</b>
<b>The Intermediate State</b>	
<b>Immortality of Man</b>	
<b>Are Men Judged at Death?</b>	
<b>What Will Become of Wicked?</b>	
<b>Will the Majority Be Saved or Lost?</b>	
<b>What is the Soul, and is it Immortal?</b>	
<b>The Spirit of Man</b>	
<b>Man's Origin and Nature</b>	
<b>The Resurrection of the Dead</b>	
<b>Promises to the Fathers</b>	
<b>The Saints' Inheritance</b>	
<b>Lesson 7.....</b>	<b>121</b>
<b>The Glorious City</b>	
<b>New Jerusalem Comes When, Where</b>	
<b>Sobriety</b>	
<b>Saving Faith</b>	
<b>Nature of God's Law</b>	

<b>Gossiping</b>	
<b>The Bible Name for the Church</b>	
<b>Cheerfulness</b>	
<b>Lesson 8.....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>The Ministration of Death</b>	
<b>Free-Will Offerings</b>	
<b>Ministry Supported by Tithes</b>	
<b>Judgment of the Transgressor</b>	
<b>Punishment of the Wicked</b>	
<b>Christ the Great Teacher</b>	
<b>Reconciled to God</b>	
<b>Justification</b>	
<b>Danger in Rejecting Light</b>	
<b>The Perpetuity of the Law</b>	
<b>Lesson 9.....</b>	<b>151</b>
<b>Marriage Institution</b>	
<b>Submission</b>	
<b>Trusting in Jesus</b>	
<b>Temperance</b>	
<b>The Kingdom of God</b>	
<b>The Law of Liberty</b>	
<b>The Law Magnified by Christ</b>	
<b>The Nature of Man</b>	
<b>The Sons of God</b>	
<b>Unity of Believers</b>	
<b>Lesson 10.....</b>	<b>167</b>
<b>Was Peter the Foundation Rock?</b>	
<b>Pride</b>	
<b>Missionary Work</b>	
<b>A Dying Church</b>	
<b>The Poor, and Our Duty Toward Them</b>	
<b>The Parable of the Tares and Wheat</b>	
<b>Christ the Way of Life</b>	
<b>Israel, Present and Future</b>	
<b>Praise and Thanksgiving</b>	
<b>The Christian's Armor</b>	
<b>Lesson 11.....</b>	<b>183</b>
<b>Evidence of Acceptance With God</b>	
<b>Preaching the Gospel</b>	
<b>The Two Husbands</b>	
<b>The Love of God</b>	
<b>Ministration of Good Angels</b>	
<b>Not Hearers, But Doers</b>	
<b>The Two Laws</b>	
<b>Lesson 12.....</b>	<b>199</b>



The Two Olive Trees	
The Colored Man: His Origin, Religion, and Destiny	
Do You Love the World, or God?	
The Five Kingdoms	
The Four Beasts	
Lesson 13.....	213
The Second Coming of Christ	
The Manner of Christ's Coming	
We Know Not the Day Nor the Hour	
The Signs of the Times	
Social Signs of Christ's Coming	
Can We Know Near the Time of His Coming?	
The Spirits in Prison	
The Chastisement of the Jewish People	
The Gathering of the Jewish People	
The Gathering of the Jewish People -- Part 2	
Lesson 14.....	231
The Last Generation	
Russia in Prophecy	
Bible Organization and Service	
Hell, When and Where is it?	
Sinning Against the Holy Ghost	
Danger of Rejecting Light	
Promises to the Overcomers	
Israel, Origin and Significance	
Lesson 15.....	245
The Prophecy of Revelation 12	
The Beast With Seven Heads and Ten Horns	
The Woman Riding the Beast in Revelation 17	
The Third Angel's Message	
The Mark of the Beast	
The Battle of Armageddon	
Lesson 16.....	261
Universal and Age Lasting Peace	
The Millennium	
The Open Grave	
Daniel and His Trial	
Death in the Kitchen -- The Clean and the Unclean Food	
The Atomic Bomb and the World on Fire	
The Holy Spirit, Gifts, and Manifestations	
Church Organization and Government	
The Passover and the Lord's Supper	
About the Author.....	277
Preserved Line Drawings.....	279
Andrew and Effie Dugger.....	281



## **Preface**

This book is dedicated especially to home Bible study. It makes the Bible teaching on all subjects plain and clear, and is arranged irrespective of the creed or discipline of any denomination. A strict adherence to the Bible will be found portrayed throughout this volume, which is the home companion of many families of various religious professions.

All subjects of Bible interest, both practical and prophetic, will be easily found by referring to the Table of Contents, and instead of giving man's opinion regarding these sacred matters, about which we are all so much concerned, many of the inspired witnesses of God are allowed to testify by giving the scriptural quotations with book, chapter, and verse. Different phases of these many subject are taken up and the text of scripture clearly setting forth just what God says about the matter is given.

Many people have lost interest in the Bible and very seldom ever read it, because they say it is so hard to understand, but this book furnishes the key, removing this obstacle and allowing the reader to enter into the realm of Bible thought and study, bringing to thousands a blessing which they had not before dreamed was so near.

The arrangement of subjects following in their order, with scriptural quotations that apply to the questions posed, is a style that has been used by a number of Bible scholars. The "Bible Home Instructor" was created for the purpose of placing into the hands of the public a book which can bestow spiritual blessings. It can also provide greater intellectual satisfaction and contentment through a more thorough understanding of the Bible, thereby paving the way for us to ultimately enter into our promised haven of eternal rest, the Paradise of God. As overcomers of this world, our eternal hope is that we will, with our loved ones, enjoy a vast eternity where sin, sorrow, sickness, and death shall never molest and nothing shall make afraid. We fervently pray that you too will take hold of the reins of your own life, and join us in this Way.

# **The Bible Home Instructor**

## **A Brief History of the Bible**

### **The Word Of God**

The Bible is the Book through which God has revealed His will to man, and in which mankind have set before them the ways of life and death.

The Bible is as perfect as are all the productions of God, and is therefore without fault. It contains within itself proof of its claim for divinity, that cannot be shattered by the strongest thrusts of the infidel.

The Bible contains sixty-six books or pamphlets bound together in one volume. The word Bible is derived from the Greek word "ta biblia" meaning the book, or the book of books. The word is derived from a root designating the inner bark of the linden tree on which the ancients wrote their books. It is spoken of as "the book" being superior to all books. But the application of the word Bible to these sixty-six books can only be traced back to the fifth century of our era, the word scriptures prior to this time was applied to these carefully preserved sacred writings.

### **The Bible Authors**

There are at least thirty-six different authors, who wrote in three continents and many countries, during a period of fifteen hundred years. Among these authors were men in every vocation of life, thus touching all the experiences of men. It was written in two languages, Hebrew and Greek with the exceptions of a few passages in the Old Testament which were written in Chaldaic (Ezra 5: 8; 6: 12; 7: 12-26; Daniel 2: 4-7, and verse 28, and Jeremiah 10:28), the remainder of the Old Testament was written in Hebrew.

### **Ancient Manuscripts**

At the present time all of the ancient records of the original documents, of Old Testament now in existence are recorded on baked clay tablets deposited in museums of antiquity. During the nineteenth and twentieth century, some striking excavations confirming Bible history have been made. Clay tablets have been unearthed at various periods the most noteworthy of which were the excavations made in 1845 from the long buried ruins of the ancients city of Nineveh where at one time was one of the world's greatest libraries.

Of the ancient manuscripts of the New Testament Greek there are several now in existence, in a state of excellent preservation. One of these was found in Alexandria Egypt as late as 1628. It was copied from one of the first manuscripts, is dated A.D. 350, and is now in the British Museum. This one like those discovered at various intervals of this era strikingly agrees and harmonizes with all other manuscripts now in existence, and shows how God in His infinite wisdom and in miraculous ways has watched over and preserved His revelations to mankind.

## **Original Writing And Translations**

The Old Testament was first written in the Hebrew language upon long scrolls of papyrus (paper), which were afterwards translated into other languages. The Septuagint is oldest of the versions, meaning by its name the translation "by the seventy." It was composed from the original records at Alexandria for the Alexandrian library, by a company of seventy learned Jews, about 285 B.C. The order of this translation is according to reliable testimony given by Alexander the Great, following his visit to Jerusalem [in] 332 B.C., at which time he had become familiar with the prophecies of Daniel 8:21, concerning himself, regarding his career and fate, which were so accurately fulfilled in his life, death and the division of his kingdom after his death. This is mentioned by Josephus book 11, chapter 8.

## **The Bible in Remote Time**

Before mass printing, the Scriptures were very costly, owing to their limited circulation. Few people had an opportunity to read them for themselves and therefore they knew but little about their contents. Because of this, their illuminating and life saving truths were unknown and the error and dark superstition of the imaginative minds of the people, were worldwide.

It required much effort and long tedious hours of writing to transcribe new copies of the Scriptures; but by the employment of hundreds of scribes, thousands of bulky volumes of this sacred book were finally copied and sold for a high price.

## **The First Burning of Bibles**

During the 6th century A.D. when the world was suffering under the plague of the Turkish and Arabian hoards led by the notorious outlaw Mohammed, Palestine was overrun, Jerusalem was captured; and as their conquests spread throughout northern Africa, Alexandria was sacked. The great Alexandrian library fell into their hands, and the books (including many Bibles), were distributed among the four thousand departments of the capitol, and served to feed the fires six months.

From this time forward darkness spread its gloom over the known world. While the light of God's word was kept from this part of the world, by the followers of the false prophet Mohammed, the other portions were likewise darkened by the influences emanating from Rome, as the Papacy grew extending her power universally, bringing the world into that long period known in history as the dark ages, which continued until the beginning of the reformation in the 13th century. At the time when Antichrist was climbing to the summit of his impious dignity in the Southern hemisphere, the papacy was forging the chains of delusion in the Northern hemisphere.

The translation of the Bible into the English language in 1380 by John Wycliff was the chief event of the beginning of the Reformation. To perform such a work at this time of the world's dark drama, required a bold heart and fearless purpose that danger could not appall. For undertaking this work, Wycliff was attacked from many quarters. It was said that he was introducing among the multitudes a book that was reserved exclusively

for the priests, and it was claimed that by doing this the gospel by him was laid open to the laity, and the gospel pearl would be cast aboard and "trodden under the foot of swine." The people at large, regardless of station were exhorted, in the preface of his translation, to read the scripture.

At the age of twenty, while the great reformer, Martin Luther, was attending the university of Erfurt, he found a Bible; holding it in his hands, he was thrilled with joy, and exclaimed, "Oh God, could I but have one of these books, I would ask no other treasure." And later, while in a convent, he had free access to a Bible which was chained, so as not to be removed, and by constant and diligent study, he finally became master of the language in which it was written and made a complete translation of the New Testament in 1532, and of the entire Bible in 1534.

William Tyndale [who was] likewise inspired by the same motive that actuated the zeal and work of Wycliff, translated the New Testament into the English language in 1525, and later portions of the Old Testament scriptures. The purpose of his whole life seemed to be an ardent desire to give the Bible to the common people and thus the light of divine truth began once more to shine forth, but as before, not without opposition. These brave reformers in so dealing with the words of the living God, were trampling on the feet of Satan, and thereby courting persecution. And, as usual, he was not without agents to do his bidding, so men endeavored to stem the rising tide of the reformation by burning the Bibles, and the reformers as well.

### **Burning Of Bibles Again**

The burning of Bibles were commenced in England with the destruction of Tyndale's edition of the New Testament at St. Paul's Cross, London, in 1527, followed by the burning of the second edition three years later. Not many years after this there were wholesale burnings of the writings of Wycliff and all the early reformers.

It seemed that the commencement of this period of hunger and thirst for the Word of God could be traced to John Wycliff, and toward him the minds of the tyrants of the time turned in awe inspiring hatred, and revenge. Forty three years after his death by order of the Council of Constance his bones were dug up and burned. By order of Charles V of Germany, Tyndale was strangled and burned at the stake, at Vilvord Brussels Oct. 6, 1536. The vengeance of other rulers was also appeased at the mercy of the reformer who stood for God and His word, but with the price of blood was God's message to man as well as redemption purchased, and amid scenes of trying persecution His truth marched steadily on to triumphant victory.

This work so nobly commenced was sanctioned by divine approval and could not be suppressed. The word of God could no longer be bound; that keen desire to read and know the scriptures was rooted in the minds of each individual so deeply that it could not be easily dispensed with. The conflagration kindled, the fire of persecution was beyond the power of human strength to suppress, and men and women could see that the Bible gave them the right, which had hitherto been denied them, of reading and acquiring spiritual knowledge and strength for themselves. Schools were established, the art of printing discovered, and the commencement of a new and glorious era of the world burst forth.

The first book printed from moveable type was a Latin Bible, printed by John

Gutenberg at Metz, Germany, in 1456. A copy of the edition of the scriptures was sold in New York City in 1911 for \$50,000.00. This was the highest price ever paid for a single book.

### **The Holy Bible To The World**

After the long dark night of sin had spread her black wings over the earth, and Bibles had been destroyed out of the land, the rays of morning light burst forth; the reformation began, the period of knowledge and education came with thousands of wonderful inventions the chief of which, for the dissemination of knowledge, was the steam printing-press 1811. Bibles were printed by the thousands and great Bible societies were organized; the greatest, perhaps, of these is the "British and Foreign Bible Society" which has published the scriptures in nearly 500 different languages. A total of 227,150,770 Bibles and portions of the Bible had been printed by this company alone up to 1912. The American Bible Society since its organization in 1816 has printed over 100,000,000 Bibles, in over one hundred languages. While these are the largest Bible societies, there are twenty-five others printing and distributing Bibles, by the millions, to the world.

These facts bring to our minds the statement of Christ in Matthew 24:14, "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come." God is truly preparing the people for His final judgment, and providing them with the light of His word, thus giving an opportunity for each to make a choice, according to the teaching of the word, before the end of the reign of sin and wickedness, and the coming of Christ, the Prince of Peace.

Ask for the guide book, the Bible from heaven,  
For our salvation, its pages were given,  
If for a truth we are seeking today,  
Ask for the guide book, it teaches the way.



## **History of the Waldenses**

### **Sabbath Observers**

The elect, or true Christians, have existed under different names at different times, viz.: the Novatians, Donatists, and Paulicians in the Middle Ages. The Albigenses, Cathari, and Waldenses were the most prominent societies who separated from the Catholic Church. They resembled each other very much in their doctrine and life. They were all agreed about the principles of the gospel.

Peter Waldo gathered together a church in the year 1160. The Waldenses existed before the time of Waldo. Already in the year of 1120 they had published a work against the papal antichrist, in which they pointed out the false doctrines of the Catholic Church. They presented this as one reason why they had separated from the church. But Waldo did much to increase their number and activity. He was a rich merchant from Lyons, France. As he was reading the Holy Scriptures, he was seized with a holy longing after the apostolic church. He sold his property, distributed the money to the poor, and preached a pure practical Christianity. Many left their homes and became teachers. At first, they did not think of separating from the Roman Church, but they were at last compelled to do so, seeing they in no wise could agree with it.

In 1532 they separated themselves fully from the papal church, adopting a short confession of faith. This common faith contained, however, the same doctrines which they had believed and followed for four hundred years. They were subjected to persecutions in 1332, 1400, and 1478. But after this time during about two hundred years they suffered a series of the most bloody persecutions. They were, especially in the middle of the seventeenth century, tormented in the most cruel manner. Yet their enemies did not succeed in subduing these brave mountaineers. In their extreme distress they defended themselves, and resisted successfully the armies of the Duke of Savoy. But their resistance against the government never went farther than necessity drove them. At the close of the seventeenth century they had to flee from the country of their fathers, overwhelmed by the superior force of their enemies.

Some of them went to Switzerland and others to Germany, but the longing after the mountains of their own country caused them to return. In 1689 they gathered from all quarters in Switzerland under the leadership of Henry Arnold. After a bloody and adventurous campaign they again obtained possession of their native country. They are said to have fought not less than eighteen battles against the French, and to have lost only thirty men. It was, however, not before 1848 that they obtained the same rights as their Catholic fellow citizens.

As a consequence of their incredible activity, the gospel was proclaimed in Italy in most of their cities. They sent out evangelists, partly clergymen, partly intelligent laymen. They worked diligently, preaching the word, scattering tracts, and organizing Protestant churches.

### **Life and Doctrine of the Waldenses**

Waldo rendered great service by translating the Bible into the French language.

This he did by the help of two clerical friends. He spent a large share of his property for the writing of numerous copies, which he distributed. His preaching fell like a kindling spark into many hearts, and before long they would burn like himself to proclaim the precious gospel to those who had not yet tasted its sweet comfort. Thus many obtained a living knowledge of the true Saviour, and experienced a genuine change of heart. In 1184 Waldo and his followers were excommunicated by the pope. They had to flee from their country, but they proclaimed the word of God more freely and publicly, diffusing it in their travels to all parts of the world. Many of the Cathari and other scattered believers united with them, and soon Protestants who were ready to sacrifice their lives for the faith of the Waldenses were found in France, Switzerland, Italy, Holland, Bohemia, and Hungary.

Westermeyer says further of the Waldenses: "We rejoice to find in the doctrine of the Waldenses the purest evangelical profession, and before its clear light the errors and abuses of the ruling church disappeared. All the erroneous doctrines of the church originated from the fact that other writings were accepted besides the Scriptures. The Waldenses affirmed positively that the Scriptures contained everything necessary to salvation. Nothing but the revelation of God should be received as an article of faith. They found in the Scriptures only one God and one mediator, Jesus Christ. They would know nothing of the merits and worship of the saints. Christ, said they, is our advocate. He pleads for us before we give ourselves to Him. He wants every soul to seek refuge in Him alone.

"They rejected most decidedly all those works by which the people burdened themselves in the established church, such as monastic vows, fasting, offering for the living and dead. Faith in Christ was the only way to obtain remission of sins and eternal life. Consequently the sale of indulgences looked to them as a terrible abuse.

"If the true church was found anywhere, it was with the Waldenses. This not only their doctrine but also their life testifies. Their knowledge of the Holy Scriptures was admirable. Before their missionaries were admitted to office, they had to learn at least the gospels according to Matthew and John, and the epistles of the New Testament, besides many portions of the writings of David, Solomon, and the prophets."

The following are testimonies from their enemies: "They are mostly rude, uneducated people. They are often dressed in the skins of animals, and live in miserable huts and caves. Yet they can all read and write. We found peasants who could repeat the book of Job by heart. Others could repeat all of the New Testament, and every boy among them had a clear idea of their faith."

A friar who had been sent out to lead them back to the Roman Church came back much astonished, and acknowledged that in all his life he had not learned so much of the Scriptures as he had in those few days he had been conversing with the heretics.

The word of God brought forth blessed fruit in those simple hearted people. Even their enemies were compelled to bear excellent testimonies of their uprightness. One of the clerical ambassadors who had received the commission to search for them and persecute them said:

"The heretics are known by their manners. Their conduct is quiet and modest, and no pride is seen in their dress" Another says: "In their manners and life they are upright, truthful in their words, and of one accord in brotherly love, but their faith is obstinate and unsound."

Still another says: "They do not try to gather riches but are satisfied with the necessities of life," "Their women are modest, not talebearers. They shun folly and levity." People that receive such testimonies from their bitterest enemies must indeed have lived very exemplary lives.

When they got up and when they went to bed, as well as before and after meals, they kneeled down before the Lord and offered up their supplication and thanksgiving. After each meal they instructed and exhorted one another. They showed faithfulness in all their affairs of life. Marriage was considered holy, and was never entered upon without the consent of the parents. They brought up their children in an excellent way. They understood how to leave their faith and uprightness as an inheritance to their posterity. "Keep your eyes on your daughters," they said, "keep them at home, and let them not wander about. Dinah, the daughter of Jacob, was seduced when she was seen of strangers. Those who decorate their daughters are like those who put dry wood on the fire that it may burn better."

For the rest they were very submissive, and took care of their everyday work with the greatest faithfulness. They were known as hardworking people, and their manner of living was exceedingly plain. They were enemies of all extravagance and debauchery. Consequently their men were sought for servants, and their women for nurses and servant girls.

The Waldenses believed that the Roman Church was the great harlot spoken of in Revelation 17. They rejected all the ordinances introduced since the ascension of Christ. They rejected the doctrine of purgatory and the feasts ordained by the church. Baptism was performed by immersion, which was used by the Catholics also at that time. They rejected infant baptism and maintained that it could be of no use for infant children because they could not believe.

The Waldenses were also called *Insabbati*. One writer says: "They would not observe the holy days. For this reason they were falsely accused of breaking the Sabbath and therefore were called *Insabbati*."

Another writer says: "They were called *Insabbati*, not because they were circumcised, but because they kept the Jewish Sabbath."

The following paragraph from history shows plainly that they kept the seventh day:

"When the king of France, Louis XII, was informed of the terrible crime whereof the Waldenses were accused by their enemies, he sent his own confessor with another man to the province of Provence to look into the matter. When they returned, they said that they had visited all the parishes where they lived and examined their meeting houses, but they found no images or things pertaining to the mass nor any of the ceremonies belonging to the Roman Church. Much less could they discover any trace of those crimes wherefore they were accused. On the contrary, they kept the Sabbath, practiced baptism like the apostolic church, and instructed their children in the Christian articles of faith and the commandments of God. When the king heard this report he said: They are indeed better people than I and my people."



## Pioneers of the Reformation

### John Wycliffe

Among the forerunners of the Reformation, John Wycliffe deserves especially to be mentioned. He was born in the year 1324. He became a member of the University of Oxford, where he afterward was employed as teacher. In the last years of his life he became pastor of the church in Lutterworth. He was renowned for his learning and diligent study of the Scriptures. He wrote a great deal against the shameful conduct of the monks, and without mercy he pointed out their intrigues and sloth. By this he soon incurred the displeasure of the pope. But Wycliffe had rendered valuable services to the state, and the civil power protected him even until his death.

Wycliffe attacked the worship of saints and images very severely. He organized a society of God fearing men, who preached the gospel to the people all through the Country. He also translated the Bible into the English language so that all could have access to the Scriptures in their mother tongue. This is the first translation of the Scriptures into the English language, and is a work of great merit.

Wycliffe died in the year 1384 in the church, while he was conducting the services. It was not until after his death that his enemies succeeded in obtaining revenge. In obedience to the order of the council of Constance, the bones of this supposed heretic were dug up, and in the year 1428 they were publicly burned, together with his books.

Before his death Wycliffe made the following beautiful confession:

"God is my witness that above all other things I have sought the honor of God, to reverence His word, and obey His law. But if, with this intention, some impure desire for worldly renown or low gain or wicked revenge has crept in unknown to me, then I sincerely repent of it, and by the grace of God I will be on my guard against it."

Wycliffe left a great number of disciples, and their conduct was a beautiful seal of his divine calling. Even his enemies had to testify of them as follows:

"The followers of Wycliffe are men with sober and modest conduct. They avoid all finery in dress, and take but little part in worldly affairs. They earn their living exclusively by the work of their hands, and cherish the greatest contempt for riches. They are perfectly contented if they have only the most necessary things of life. They are chaste and temperate, and are never found in the inns or at the public pleasures. Yet they are always busy; they either teach themselves or they teach others. They are devotional and short in their prayers, and put great stress on charity in their sermons."

Marching on to the promised prize  
We ever look upward with longing eyes;  
The Lord is preparing our mansion on high,  
And will bring our reward in the sweet by and by.  
Yes, crowns of glory we soon shall wear,  
And palms of victory we soon shall bear,  
Robes of righteousness pure and white,  
Walking the streets of refulgent light.

When the day of the Lord shall come,  
And the Church of the living God at home,  
We'll make the celestial city ring  
With the sound of glory we shall sing,  
Thou hast redeemed us dear Lamb of God;  
Cleansed from all sin by thy precious blood;  
All sorrow and sickness and death passed away,  
When a nation was born to the Lord in a day.

## **John Huss**

The Bohemian reformer, John Huss, was born 1373. His father was a poor field laborer. He was educated at the University of Prague, where he began to lecture publicly in 1398. As a confessor to the queen, he had access to the court. By his great eloquence and Christian kindness toward all he gained the favor of the people, even among the poorest.

Of his conversion Huss says:

"Once I also was wrapped in the sweet slumber of carnal security until it pleased the Lord Jesus to deliver my wretched soul from my sensual desires, as once He saved Lot out of the fire of Sodom, and to bring me into the abode of suffering ignominy and contempt. Then for the first time I became poor and broken hearted, and as I with fear and trembling studied the word of God, I began to admire the treasures of wisdom therein. Then for the first time I understood how greatly Satan had blinded the eyes even of the wise and great of this world. My heart now was thrilled with a new, powerful, saving fire which still works in prayer to God and the crucified Jesus."

Afterward, when he read the writings of Wycliffe and became acquainted with his doctrine, his eyes were opened to the corruption of the Roman Church. He preached against the prevailing corruption but especially against selling indulgences, when this was introduced in Prague. He was now more and more involved in controversy with the papal church, and in the year 1413 he was excommunicated.

Huss was, however, so highly esteemed by the government and the people of Bohemia that the papal party was unable to injure him. A general council was therefore convened in Constance. Having received promise of protection and liberty to return, Huss went to Constance; but it was not long before he was seized and thrown into prison. The faithless emperor, who had given him a letter of safe conduct, was informed that it was not necessary to keep a promise given to a heretic, and he cared nothing for the complaints made by the friends of Huss.

Huss suffered greatly in his miserable prison. He arrived at Constance, Nov. 3, 1414, and was thrown into prison November 28. On account of the earnest appeals from the Bohemians, a public hearing was finally appointed to be held January 5th of the next year.

The council before which Huss had to appear was composed of the highest dignitaries of the church and the kingdom. It consisted of thirty-four cardinals, twenty archbishops, one hundred and sixty bishops, two hundred and fifty priests, four electors, twenty dukes, and eighty counts.

As soon as Huss opened his mouth to answer the many false accusations which were brought against him, the whole assembly cried out with such vehemence and fell upon him with such rage that one would sooner think they were a multitude of wild animals than an assembly of honorable men. June 8 and 9 there was a hearing where Huss finally had an opportunity to defend himself.

From prison he wrote to his Bohemian brethren:

"I exhort you to be faithful and hold fast the truth of the divine word in the manner in which I have preached it unto you. Yet if any one in public speech or private conversation should have heard, or in any writing should have read, anything which is contrary to the divine truth, then I pray that you will not act accordingly but ask God to forgive me."

He then exhorted all in words most tender to remember their duties, asked them to pray for their enemies, and comforted them with the fact that he had not yet been condemned to death, and he believed that the Lord even until the end would keep him from renouncing the truth. July 6, the sentence of death was read before him, and the same day he was executed.

At the place of execution he was not permitted to speak, but then he prayed to God with such earnestness that some of those who were present said aloud: "What this man may have done heretofore we know not, but we do now hear that he offers up most excellent prayers to God." The elector now ordered the executioners immediately to begin the bloody work while Huss prayed aloud: "Lord Jesus, I humbly suffer this terrible death for Thy sake. I pray Thee to forgive all my enemies."

When he had ascended the pile of wood, he once more took leave of his friends and one more thanked his jailers. Then the executioners tied him to a stake with five wet ropes above the feet, under the knees, above the knees around the waist, and around his arms, and with a rusty chain around his waist. When he saw the chain he smiled and said to the executioners: "My Lord Jesus Christ, our Redeemer and Saviour, has also been tied down with a heavy chain; therefore will I, a poor, sinful man, not be ashamed to bear this chain for His name's sake."

When the executioners kindled the fire, Huss sang with a loud voice once: "Christ, Thou living Son of God, have mercy upon me," And again: "Christ, Thou living Son of God, have mercy upon me," When he began to sing the third time, the wind threw the flame into his face so that he could not sing, but he prayed silently by himself, and moved his head as long as one could pray the Lord's prayer three times, whereupon he fell asleep about 11 p. m. July 6, 1415.





## Lesson 1

### Search the Scriptures

1. From what source do we get the scriptures, and by whom are they given?

"All scripture is given by inspiration of God," II Timothy 3:16.

2. Of what value are the scriptures, and for what are they profitable to us?

"All scripture is . . . profitable, for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works," II Timothy 3:16, 17.

3. What are we admonished to do, that we may understand the Word correctly, and finally receive divine approval?

"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth," II Timothy 2:15.

4. By studying and receiving a knowledge of the sacred word, what will it finally acquire for us?

"And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus," II Timothy 3:15.

5. Why is a personal knowledge of the scriptures of vital importance to every person, and without it why might they be deceived?

"Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world," I John 4:1.

"And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness," II Corinthians 11:14-15.

6. In what way does God warn His people to be on guard?

"Wherefore take unto you the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day . . . having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace," Ephesians 6:13-15.

7. We notice that when Satan was tempting Christ for forty days and nights (Luke 4:1-12), that Christ always answered him by quoting a text of scripture. What does the Holy Spirit instruct us to do, when we are likewise tempted?

"Be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear," I Peter 3:15. "Prove all things, hold fast that which is good," I Thessalonians 5:21.

8. Why did Paul declare the people of Berea to be more noble in God's sight than those living in Thessalonica?

"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so," Acts 17:11.

9. From what source did the prophecies of the Bible come to us?

"For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost," II Peter 1:21.

## Creation and the Creator

1. By whom and when were both the heavens and the earth made?

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth," Genesis 1:1.

2. For what purpose did God make the heavens and the earth?

"For thus saith the Lord, that created the heavens: God Himself that formed the earth and made it; He hath established it, He created it not in vain: He formed it to be inhabited," Isaiah 45:18.

3. What do the Scriptures state that the heavens declare?

"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth His handiwork," Psalm 19:1.

4. To whom is worship and adoration at all times due?

"O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our maker," Psalm 95:6.

5. What will become of the graven images and false gods of the heathen?

"Thus shall ye say unto them, the gods that have not made the heavens and the earth, even they shall perish from the earth and from under these heavens," Jeremiah 10:11.

6. How does God contrast His own power with that of false gods, and in what way does He inform us to distinguish between them?

"Let them bring them forth, and shew us what shall happen: let them shew the former things what they be, that we may consider them: and know the latter end of them, or declare us things for to come. Shew the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are gods," Isaiah 41:22, 23.

7. Who created man, and whose likeness is he?

"So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him, male and female created He them," Genesis 1:27.

8. The character and power of man is just a little inferior to what great class of God's creatures?

"What is man that Thou art mindful of him? And the son of man that Thou visitest him? For Thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour," Psalm 8:4, 5.

9. What home did God first give man after his creation?

"And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed," Genesis 2:8.

10. What did the Lord provide for food for this man, and what did He give him to do?

"And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food . . . . And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it," Genesis 2:9, 15.

11. What great lesson may we learn through the things that are made?

"For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made: even His eternal power and Godhead: so that they are without excuse," Romans 1:20.

12. In view of the curse upon this earth by reason of disobedience and sin, what

hath our Creator promised?

"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered nor come into mind," Isaiah 65:17.

### Praise God for Christ

All praise to Thee, eternal Lord,  
Clothed in a garb of flesh and blood;  
Choosing a manger for Thy throne,  
While worlds on worlds are Thine alone!

Once did the skies before Thee bow;  
A virgin's arms contain Thee now:  
Angels, who did Thee rejoice,  
Now listen to Thine infant voice.

A little child, Thou art our guest,  
That weary ones in Thee may rest;  
Forlorn and lowly is Thy birth,  
That we may rise up from this earth.

Thou comest in the darksome night  
To make us children of the light;  
To make us, in the realms divine,  
Like Thine own angels round Thee shine.

All this for us Thy love hath done;  
By this to Thee our life is won;  
For this we tune our cheerful lays,  
And tell our thanks in songs of praise. -- Martin Luther

### Walking in the Light

1. Is it important for one to walk in the light of God's Word as it is revealed to them?

" . . . Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you; for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth," John 12:35.

NOTE: The foregoing statement telling His disciples to walk in the light while it was here with them, was made by Christ while He was here on the earth. So today each one has the same life revealed to us through the Bible.

2. What statement did Christ make regarding His life?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

3. Did Christ have reference to His life here on the earth?

"As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world," John 9:5.

4. What expression does Paul make concerning the life of Christ?

"For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life," Romans 5:10.

5. In what condition must one be, in order to receive the benefits of the blood of Christ?

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin," I John 1:7.

6. What is said of the path of the just?

"But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day," Proverbs 4:18.

7. For what reason are men condemned who do not come to the light?

"And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil," John 3:19.

8. If one is really sincere, and seeking truth, what will he do?

"But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God," John 3:21.

9. In rejecting light is there danger of being made to believe error?

"And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: that they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness," II Thessalonians 2:11, 12.

10. What is the Bible said to be?

"Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path," Psalm 119:105. See also Proverbs 6:23.

11. Since the Bible is a lamp to our feet, what important thing does it give?

"The entrance of Thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple," Psalm 119:130.

12. Does Christ place a blessing on those who read, and obey the Revelation?

"Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein," Revelation 1:3.

13. After one sees, and obeys Bible light, may he then be rejected because of unbelief?

"I will therefore put you in remembrance, though you once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt afterward destroyed them that believed not," Jude 5. Also see Ezekiel 18:24.

14. For whom are these things written?

"Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come," I Corinthians 10:11.

15. Upon what conditions only may we be made partakers of His promises?

"For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end," Hebrews 3:14.

O Word of God incarnate,

O wisdom from on high,

O Truth unchanged, unchanging,  
O Light of our dark sky!

It is the golden casket  
Where gems of truth are stored;  
It is the heaven-drawn picture  
Of Christ the living Word. -- William Howe

### How to Learn and Know the Truth

1. For what does Hosea say some will be destroyed?  
"My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge," Hosea 4:6.
2. What words of instruction are given by Isaiah?  
"Seek ye out of the book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail," Isaiah 34:16.
3. Through what source did Christ say one could learn of Him?  
"Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me," John 5:39.
4. Why could they learn of Christ by searching the scriptures?  
"For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed Me: for he wrote of Me," John 5:46.
5. What does Paul tell us to do?  
"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth," II Timothy 2:15.
6. Will all the evidence on any one subject be found in one place?  
"For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little and there a little," Isaiah 28:10; see also verse 13.

NOTE: Or in other words, appeal to each of the Bible writers and find out what they all have to say about any one subject.

7. By whose authority were the scriptures given?  
"All scripture is give by inspiration of God," II Timothy 3:16.
8. For what is it profitable?  
"And is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness," II Timothy 3:16.
9. Why are they profitable for the foregoing?  
"That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works," II Timothy 3:17.
10. What knowledge will one gain from a study of the scriptures?  
"And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus," II Timothy 3:15.
11. How does Christ say one can be made free?  
"And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free," John 8:32.
12. What is declared to be truth?

"Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth," John 17:17. See also Psalm 119:142.

13. What are God's ministers to preach?

"Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine," II Timothy 4:2.

14. What of those who teach otherwise?

"But though we, or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel unto you . . . let him be accursed," Galatians 1:8.

15. For what were Bereans commended?

"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so," Acts 17:11.

16. In studying the scriptures whose guidance are we to seek?

"If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God," James 1:5.

17. For what purpose were these things written?

"For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope," Romans 15:4.

O that the Lord would guide my ways  
To keep His statutes still!  
O that my God would grant me grace  
To know and do His will!

Order my footsteps by Thy word,  
And make my heart sincere;  
Let sin have no dominion, Lord,  
But keep my conscience clear.

Make me to walk in Thy command  
Tis a delightful road;  
Nor let my head, nor heart, nor hands  
Offend against my God. -- Isaac Watts

## Life and Death

1. Who is declared to be the author of life?

"For with Thee is the fountain of life: in Thy light shall we see light," Psalm 36:9.

2. What does our Savior say in regard to life?

"And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to Me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on Me shall never thirst," John 6:35.

3. What is the source of all present life?

"God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things," Acts 17:24, 25.

4. How are believers now classed in relation to eternal life?

"For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God," Colossians 3:3.

5. When will this life, which is eternal, be given to those who deserve it?

"When Christ, Who is our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory," Colossians 3:4.

6. What is eternal life declared to be?

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

7. To whom will eternal life be given?

"To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life," Romans 2:7.

NOTE: By the above scriptures we learn that eternal life will be given only to those seeking for it. So the doctrine of eternal torment must be a falsehood as they too would have eternal life.

8. Give a few scriptures telling who will have eternal life, and when it will be given.

"For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me," Job 19:25-27.

"In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed," I Corinthians 15:52.

"For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him," I Thessalonians 4:14.

"For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works," Matthew 16:27.

9. Is there any possibility of death for the righteous after the resurrection?

"Neither can they die anymore: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection," Luke 20:36.

### **Searching the Scriptures**

1. What did Christ command the people of His day concerning the Scriptures?

"Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life; and they are they which testify of Me," John 5:39.

NOTE: When this was spoken not a word of the New Testament had been written. It was to the Old Testament that the Jews looked as their guide to eternal life, and although they would not accept Christ, He said that these very books, which they esteemed so highly, testified of Him. If the Old Testament points to Christ, it is worthy of our careful study.

2. How early have we any record that the gospel was preached?

"And the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham," Galatians 3:8.

3. Was it the gospel of Christ that was preached unto Abraham?

"Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day: and he saw it, and was glad," John 8:56.

4. At what other time is it said the gospel was taught in the Old Testament dispensation?

"For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them; but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it," Hebrews 4:2.

NOTE: The persons here referred to by "them" are the Israelites when on their journey from Egypt to the promised land, as will be seen by the Scripture connection. Paul says the gospel was preached unto us as well as unto them, putting "them" ahead, and letting "us" have the gospel afterward.

5. Why did Moses give up the riches of Egypt?

"Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt," Hebrews 11:26. People in that age, even as now, were influenced by the riches of Christ to give up the world.

6. Whence came the spiritual meat and drink of the Israelites while in the wilderness?

"And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; and did all eat the same spiritual meat; and did all drink the same spiritual drink; for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ," I Corinthians 10:2-4.

7. What was the chief cornerstone of the faith of both apostles and prophets?

"And are build upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone," Ephesians 2:20.

8. What part of the Scriptures did Philip hear a certain eunuch reading?

"And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?" Acts 8:30.

9. When asked if he understood what he was reading, what reply did the eunuch make?

"And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him," verse 31.

10. What did Philip then do?

"Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus," verse 35.

11. What are the Scriptures able to do?

"Thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus," II Timothy 3:15.

12. What was said of the Bereans because they searched the Scriptures daily?

"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so," Acts 17:11.



13. By what is man to live?

"Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God," Matthew 4:4. If man is to live by the word of God, he certainly ought to use it daily, as daily nourishment is needed to keep him alive.

14. How greatly has God magnified His word?

"I will worship toward Thy holy temple, and praise Thy name for Thy loving kindness and for Thy truth; for Thou hast magnified Thy word above all Thy name," Psalm 138:2.

Word of the everlasting God;  
Will of His glorious Son,  
Without Thee how could earth be trod,  
Or heaven itself be won?

Lord, grant us all aright to learn  
The wisdom it imparts,  
And to its heavenly teaching turn  
With simple, childlike hearts.

### **The Sure Word of Prophecy**

1. By what means is all Scripture given?

"All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness," II Timothy 3:16.

2. For what purpose?

"That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works," verse 17.

3. To whom do things revealed belong?

"The secret things belong unto the Lord our God; but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children forever," Deuteronomy 29:29. That is, they belong to the human family.

4. What is the last book of the Bible called?

"The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him," Revelation 1:1.

5. What is said of those who read or study this book?

"Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein," verse 3. The book of Revelation, then, is not only designed to be understood, but a blessing is pronounced upon those who read or study it. No one would expect to obtain a blessing by reading a book he could not understand; hence the implication is that he who studies this book understands it.

6. How were the Old Testament prophecies given?

"For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost," II Peter 1:21.

7. What is said of the interpretation of these prophecies?

"Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation," verse 20.

8. In giving their prophetic utterances, what did the prophets seek?

"Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls; of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you," I Peter 1:9, 10.

9. By whose spirit were they actuated?

"Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow," verse 11.

10. How did Peter confirm his former preaching on the coming of Christ?

"For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of His majesty," II Peter 1:16.

11. When did the apostle see the majesty (kingship) of Christ, and hear the approbative words of God?

"And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with Him in the holy mount," verse 18.

12. What other and more certain evidence did he have of the power and coming of Christ?

"We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts," verse 19.

13. At the time when Jerusalem was to be destroyed to what prophecy did Christ point His disciples as a guide to their actions?

"When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)," Matthew 24:15.

14. When were all the prophecies in the book of Daniel to be understood?

"But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased," Daniel 12:4.

### **Peace on Earth**

When Jesus was born in a manger  
God's angels came down to this earth,  
And told to the lowly shepherds  
The news of His wonderful birth.

Oh, quickly they hastened to find Him  
Their Savior, Redeemer and King;  
"Peace, peace upon earth" was the message  
The angels did joyfully sing.

They found Him at last, in the manger,  
Just as the angels had said,  
The dear little Babe with His mother,

And only the hay for a bed. -- E.E.W.

### Prophecies Relating to Christ's Birth

1. How did Moses speak of Christ?

"The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto Him ye shall hearken," Deuteronomy 18:15.

2. How may we know that the Prophet here spoken of is Christ?

"For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren like unto me . . . Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold these days," Acts 3:22, 24.

3. Of whom was He to be born?

"Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign: Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call His name Immanuel," Isaiah 7:14.

4. Where was He to be born?

"But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall He come forth unto Me that is to be ruler in Israel," Micah 5:2.

5. Was this prediction fulfilled?

"Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king," Matthew 2:1.

6. How was His advent to be heralded?

"The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God," Isaiah 40:3.

7. By whom was this fulfilled?

"And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?" "He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias," John 1:19, 23.

The hope of joy, of life and immortality,

When life at last shall close.

From all infirmity at last made free,

To fall asleep in sweet repose.

Waiting the last great call,

Restored to all we've known and loved,

No more before the tyrant Death, to fall,

Our hope to be of Christ approved.

Faith sees a world of life and love,

A promise given within the veil,

Our hope secure with Christ above,

Saved by His blood shall never fail.

The grandeur of a new world to explore.

Unending years in which to live and do;  
To see the Christ, whom all adore,  
And hear His voice, All things belong to you. -- J.A. Nugent

## Redemption

1. To whom does the subject of redemption pertain?

"In whom we have redemption through His [Christ's] blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace," Ephesians 1:7.

2. Is this redemption present or future?

"And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption," Ephesians 4:30.

"And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your hands; for your redemption draweth nigh," Luke 21:28.

3. What was the condition of the Gentiles before they heard the Gospel?

"That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world," Ephesians 2:12.

NOTE: From the scriptures cited above we learn that redemption includes our eternal salvation, and the fulfillment of all God's promises to the true believers.

4. What does redemption manifest?

"That in the ages to come He might shew the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus," Ephesians 2:7.

5. What is our present relation to God?

"And if children, then heirs, heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together," Romans 8:17.

6. When is the proof of our acceptance with God, made manifest to the world?

"And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body," Romans 8:23.

7. Who secured these privileges for us?

"Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us," Hebrews 9:12.

8. What besides life is assured by redemption?

"But the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace," Psalm 37:11. Or, the earth is redeemed to its former state of beauty.

9. What manifestation have we of divine love?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

10. Who has the keeping of this life?

"For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God," Colossians 3:3.

11. When will we appear with Him in glory?

"When Christ, Who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in

glory," Colossians 3:4.

NOTE: Eternal life is God's greatest gift to man; nothing known to us can be compared to it. The promise of life should be accepted with the deepest gratitude, as it is simply a divine favor proving God's love for the human family.

We praise Thee for the radiance  
That from the hallowed page,  
A lamp to guide our footsteps,  
Shines on from age to age.

The church from her dear Master  
Received the gift divine,  
And still that light she lifteth  
O'er all the earth to shine.

## Faith

1. Why is faith necessary in relation to a Christian life?

"But without faith it is impossible to please Him [God]," Hebrews 11:6, first part of verse.

2. Why can we not please God without faith?

"For he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him," Hebrews 11:6, last part of verse.

3. As this Christian virtue cannot be void in the life of anyone wishing to please God, what is faith?

"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen," Hebrews 11:1.

4. How can we obtain this evidence of things not seen, or how is faith acquired?

"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God," Romans 10:17.

5. From what source do we derive the word of God, which through hearing and receiving will give us faith?

"All scripture is given by inspiration of God," II Timothy 3:16.

6. The scriptures having come from God, to the degree that having a knowledge of them will give us faith, what should be our daily practice?

"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth," II Timothy 2:15.

7. Why in making a study of the scriptures and prophecies do we not find contrary statements and contradictions thus destroying faith?

"For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost," II Peter 1:21.

8. How does a study of the scriptures give us evidence of things not seen, or faith?

"Produce your cause, saith the Lord, bring forth your strong reasons, saith the King of Jacob. Let them bring them forth, and shew us what shall happen: let them shew

the former things what they be, that we may consider them, and know the latter end of them; or declare us things for to come. Shew the things that are to come hereafter," Isaiah 41:21-23.

9. How does God expect us to have faith in Him, and know that He is God and that there is none like Him?

"I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like Me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done," Isaiah 46:9, 10.

10. As God claims the right to His position, and expects us to have faith in Him on the grounds that He declared the end from the beginning and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, what evidence can we give in support of His claim?

"I have declared the former things from the beginning; and they went forth out of my mouth, and I shewed them; I did them suddenly, and they came to pass," Isaiah 48:3.

11. Why have we faith that all good things God has promised us, which we have not realized, will come to pass?

"And ye know in all your hearts and in all your souls, that not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the Lord your God spake concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing hath failed thereof," Joshua 23:14.

12. As our faith for future conditions being realized, is based on the evidence we have of God's promised declaration in the past always being fulfilled, we will give the following evidence for future conditions.

At one time in the history of the world, Babylon was the most magnificent city ever known. It stood towering in grandeur sublime, sixty miles around with its hanging gardens, terrace upon terrace, and was surrounded with mighty concrete walls 85 ft. thick and over two hundred feet high. It was the capitol city of the world, but today there is nothing left of this once glowing city, to mark where it stood.

13. What did God say of this place nearly three thousand years ago?

"Babylon shall become heaps, a dwelling place for dragons, an astonishment, and an hissing, without an inhabitant . . . . Then shalt thou say, O Lord, Thou hast spoken against this place, to cut it off, that none shall remain in it, neither man nor beast, but that it shall be desolate forever," Jeremiah 51:37, 62.

NOTE: The Bible has also spoken in striking language about the future destiny of other cities, as well as races of people, nations, world kingdoms, and even individuals. The history of the past, as well as the light of the present, has been carried out to the very letter. Not one promise has ever been broken; therefore we have strong and explicit faith, through our knowledge of these facts, that everything spoken therein regarding the future will likewise be verified in reality, according to His divine pleasure.

The day of grace will soon be past,  
The world will weep and wail at last,  
When mercy's door is closed and fast,  
Forever, Oh! Forever!

Their anguish then will not avail,

Nor cries for open door prevail,  
No answer to their bitter wail,  
Forever, Oh! Forever!

They scorned the Saviour's pleading voice,  
The love of sin was made their choice.  
Their doom is death while saints rejoice,  
To live with Christ forever.

They come from death and everywhere  
To meet the Savior in the air,  
While sinners sink to dark despair,  
Forever, Oh! Forever!

## Repentance

1. To whom is repentance to be preached?  
"And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name among all nations," Luke 24:47.
2. Who are called to repentance?  
"I came not to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance," Luke 5:32.
3. How is one to know he is a sinner?  
"By the law is the knowledge of sin," Romans 3:20.
4. Is this a universal rule?  
"We have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin," verse 9.
5. How are sinners convinced of sin?  
"But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors," James 2:9.
6. What part does the Holy Spirit act in this work?  
"For if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will also reprove the world of sin," John 16:7, 8, 13, 14.
7. What will be the inquiry of those who are thus convicted?  
"Sirs, What must I do to be saved?" Acts 16:30.
8. What reply should always be returned to this inquiry?  
"Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins," Acts 2:38.
9. How will the convicted sinner be constrained to act?  
"I will declare mine iniquity: I will be sorry for my sin," Psalm 38:18.
10. What result will godly sorrow work?  
"For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation," II Corinthians 7:10.
11. What will any other kind of sorrow do?  
"The sorrow of the world worketh death," same verse.
12. What does true repentance involve?

"Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die?" Ezekiel 18:31.

13. After repentance, how should one live?

"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?" Romans 6:1-1.

14. Whose servant is he that committeth sin?

"He that committeth sin is of the Devil," I John 3:8.

15. How does God regard the truly penitent?

"To this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at My word," Isaiah 66:2.

16. What promise is made to those who confess their sins?

"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John 1:9.

17. By what are we cleansed from sin?

"The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin," verse 7.

18. Toward whom are we to repent?

"Repentance toward God," Acts 20:21.

19. Toward whom must we exercise faith?

"And faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ," same verse.

20. Does repentance generally precede faith?

"Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel," Mark 1:14-15.

21. How will one show that he has truly repented?

"Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance," Matthew 3:8.

22. What does the grace of God teach?

"For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world," Titus 2:11, 12.

## Conversion

1. What is necessary to salvation?

"And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 18:3.

2. Is it the moral or the physical nature that is changed by conversion?

"For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:6, 7.

3. What two steps are necessary to make this change?

"I have taught you publickly, and from house to house, testifying both to the Jews and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ," Acts 20:20, 21.

4. Of what is it necessary to repent?

"Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out," Acts



3:19.

5. What is sin?

"Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law; for sin is the transgression of the law," I John 3:4.

6. What does the Psalmist tell us is perfect, converting the soul?

"The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul," Psalm 19:7. Or, turn from being a transgressor of God's law, to be an obedient servant thereof. Conversion means a turning around.

7. What law does one transgress when he sins?

"But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors . . . For He that said [margin: that law which said], Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law," James 2:9, 11.

8. What part does the law act in repentance?

"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight; for by the law is the knowledge of sin," Romans 3:20.

9. When Paul was converted, what first brought conviction to him?

"I had not known sin, but by the law; for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet," Romans 7:7.

10. What more than conviction is necessary to true repentance?

"For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of; but the sorrow of the world worketh death," II Corinthians 7:10.

11. What does true repentance involve?

"Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. Cast away from you all your transgression, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit," Ezekiel 18:30, 31.

12. What does repentance further require?

"Seek ye the Lord, while He may be found, call ye upon Him while He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him," Isaiah 55:6, 7.

13. How will genuine repentance be shown?

"Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance [margin, answerable to amendment of life]," Matthew 3:8.

14. What besides repentance is required in conversion?

"Repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ," Acts 20:21.

15. Who is Christ, that one should believe in Him?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

16. What has Christ done for us that we should be saved through Him?

"Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures," I Corinthians 15:3.

17. In order for one to be cleansed from sin, what is required of him?

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John

1:7-9.

18. What should be one's relation to sin after repentance?

"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?" Romans 6:1, 2.

19. How does one become dead to sin?

"Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin," verse 6.

20. What is done with the "old man" after he dies?

"Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life," verse 4.

21. When truly converted, what does every one receive?

"Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost," Acts 2:38. Therefore every real conversion is a miracle of divine grace.

22. Can any one be a Christian without having the Spirit of Christ?

"Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His," Romans 8:9.

23. What precious relation is sustained when one has the Holy Spirit?

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God," Romans 8:14.

24. Can it be known when this relation exists?

"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God," verse 16.

25. When one thus stands complete in Christ, what is he?

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature, old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new," II Corinthians 5:17.

26. Of what character are the "old things" which are to be put off?

"But now ye also put off all these: anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds," Colossians 3:8, 9.

27. What will the new man acquire?

"Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering: forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness," Colossians 3:13-14.

28. Where will the affections then be found?

"If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth," verses 1, 2.

29. Having done all this, what will be the final result?

"For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, Who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory," verses 3, 4

## Confession

1. Is there a promise for those who confess their sins?

"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John 1:9.

2. To whom besides the Lord should one confess his sins?

"Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual, fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much," James 5:16.

3. If one tries to cover up a sin, and will not properly confess it, what effect will such a course have on the delinquent?

"He that covereth his sins shall not prosper; but whoso confesseth and forsaketh him shall have mercy," Proverbs 28:13.

4. Is it possible to hide a sin from God, by refusing to let it be known?

"For there is not a word in my tongue but, lo, O Lord, Thou knowest it altogether," Psalm 139:4; Hebrews 4:13.

5. How did David feel before he confessed his sins?

"When I kept silence, my bones waxed old through my roaring all the day long. For day and night Thy hand was heavy upon me: my moisture is turned into the drought of summer," Psalm 32:3, 4.

6. What came to him after confession?

"I acknowledged my sin unto Thee and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin," verse 5.

7. Who is the advocate of the sinner?

"If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous," I John 2:1.

8. How fully did Israel confess to Samuel when they wished him to intercede before God in their behalf?

"And all the people said unto Samuel, Pray for they servants unto the Lord Thy God, that we die not; for we have added unto all our sins this evil, to ask us a king," I Samuel 12:19.

9. How ought one to feel as he confesses his sins?

"Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Thy loving kindness: according unto the multitude of Thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions," Psalm 51:1.

10. Will there be a time when every one will confess to God?

"For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue shall confess to God . . . So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God," Romans 14:11, 12.

NOTE: The confessions here spoken of are those which will be made in the judgment when every one will have to tell the exact truth regarding himself; for a record of every word and act of his life will be there. If any one has refused to acknowledge his sins before, affirming that he could not see them, he will then see just as the record has them marked. He will confess his sins when it is too late to obtain forgiveness. It is far better to acknowledge our faults now, and with the help of God put them away, while there is hope

of salvation.

When my heart is sad and lonely,  
    With grief or sin oppressed:  
I come to Thee, sweet Jesus  
    And Thou dost give me rest.  
I know Thou carest for me  
    With love that ne'er can die,  
And Thou art now preparing  
    My home from in the sky. -- G. Hooper

## Lesson 2

### Sufferings of Christ

1. Why did Christ come into the world?

"This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief, I Timothy 1:15.

2. What prompted God to give His Son to die for man?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16. See also I John 4:9, 10; Romans 5:8.

3. What did the prophet say Christ would be called to endure?

"He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth; He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth . . . He was taken from prison and from judgment; and who shall declare His generation? for He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgression of My people was He stricken," Isaiah 53:7, 8.

4. Must not Christ have known beforehand of these things?

"Then He took unto Him the twelve and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. For He shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated and spitted on; and they shall scourge Him, and put Him to death," Luke 18:31-33.

5. How did the Savior feel when the sins of the world were rolling upon Him?

"And He took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. Then saith He unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death; tarry ye here, and watch with Me," Matthew 26:37, 38.

6. In His distress, for what did He pray?

"And He went a little further, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from Me; nevertheless not as I will, but as Thou wilt," verse 39.

7. How great was the agony of His soul?

"And being in an agony He prayed more earnestly; and His sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground," Luke 22:44.

8. After this remarkable prayer, what happened to cause Him more grief?

"And while He yet spake, behold, a multitude and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss Him. But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?" verses 47, 48.

9. To what place was He taken?

"Then took they Him, and led Him, and brought Him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off, verse 54.

10. While at the high priest's house, what act of Peter's caused the Savior additional suffering?

"Another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean. And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest . . . And immediately,

while he yet spake, the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter," verses 59-61.

11. What reproachful things were done to Christ at the high priest's house?

"And the men that held Jesus mocked Him, and smote Him. And when they had blindfolded Him, they struck Him on the face, and asked Him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote Thee?" verses 63, 64.

12. Where was Christ taken?

"And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led Him into their council," verse 66.

13. What was their object in taking Him there, since it was not in their power judicially to sentence him?

"Then said they all, Art Thou then the Son of God? And He said unto them, Ye say that I am. And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of His own mouth," verses 70, 71.

14. Having procured the pretext they sought, what did they next do?

"And the whole multitude of them arose, and led Him unto Pilate, Luke 23:1.

15. When Pilate desired to let Christ go, how did they remonstrate?

"And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place," verse 5.

16. When Pilate heard that Christ had been in Galilee, what did he do?

"And as soon as he knew that He belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent Him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time," verse 7.

17. Did the chief priests and scribes follow Christ before Herod?

"And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused Him," verse 10.

18. What indignity did Herod put upon the Savior?

"And Herod with his men of war set Him at nought, and mocked Him, and arrayed Him in a gorgeous robe, and sent Him again to Pilate," verse 11.

19. When Christ was again brought before Pilate, what did Pilate propose to do?

"I have found no cause of death in Him: I will therefore chastise Him, and let Him go," verse 22.

20. How did Christ's accusers act?

"And they were instant [earnest] with loud voices, requiring that He might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed," verse 23.

21. Besides yielding to the clamors of the Jews, what cruelty did Pilate inflict upon Christ?

"Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged Him," John 19:1.

22. What shameful treatment did He receive from the soldiers?

"And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon His head, and a reed in His right hand; and they bowed the knee before Him, and mocked Him, saying Hail, King of the Jews! And they spit upon Him, and took the reed, and smote Him on the head," Matthew 27:29, 30.

23. After bringing Him to the place of crucifixion, what did they offer Him to stupefy Him?

"They gave Him vinegar to drink mingled with gall; and when He had tasted thereof He would not drink," verse 34.

24. What prayer did He utter as they were nailing Him to the cross?

"Then said Jesus, Father forgive them; for they know not what they do," Luke 23:34.

25. With what words did they taunt Him while on the cross?

"Likewise also the chief priests mocking Him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; Himself He cannot save. If He be the King of Israel let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him," Matthew 27:41, 42.

26. As He cried out in agony on the cross, what was again offered Him?

"And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave Him to drink," verse 48.

27. What closed this terrible scene?

"When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, He said, It is finished; and He bowed His head and gave up the ghost," John 19:30.

28. What wonderful demonstration attested nature's sympathy with the dying Son of God?

"And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour. And the sun was darkened, and the vail of the temple was rent in the midst," Luke 23:44, 45.

29. Was it necessary for Christ thus to suffer?

"For it became Him, for Whom are all things, and by Whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings," Hebrews 2:10.

30. If Christ was permitted to suffer all this for us, what does it show?

"He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall he not with Him also freely give us all things?" Romans 3:32.

### **Salvation Only Through Christ**

1. What inducement did God have to send His Son into the world?

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son," John 3:16.

2. For what purpose was Christ sent into the world?

"That whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved," John 3:16, 17.

3. For what purpose does Paul say Christ came into the world?

"This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners," I Timothy 1:15.

4. In what condition are all men?

"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:32.

5. What is the wages of sin?

"For the wages of sin is death," Romans 6:23.

6. How many are affected by Adam's transgression?

"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered the world, and death by sin; And so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned," Romans 5:12.

7. What is the gift of God?

"The gift of God is eternal life," Romans 6:23.

8. Through whom does this life come?

"Through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

9. How many may receive this gift?

"For therefore we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, Who is the Savior of all men, specially of those that believe," I Timothy 4:10.

"But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe," Galatians 3:22.

10. How many does Christ say may have this salvation?

"And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely," Revelation 22:17.

11. Why was He to be named Jesus?

"Thou shalt call His name Jesus; for he shall save His people from their sins," Matthew 1:21.

12. Is there salvation in any other?

"Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved," Acts 4:12.

13. How dependent are we upon Christ for salvation?

"I am the vine, ye are the branches: . . . for without Me ye can do nothing," John 15:5.

14. How completely did Christ win the victory over death?

"I am the first and the last; I am He that liveth, and was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death," Revelation 1:17, 18.

15. How complete is the salvation obtained in Christ?

"Wherefore, He is able to save them to the utmost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them," Hebrews 7:25.

16. What should we say for such a Savior?

"Thanks be unto God for His unspeakable gift," II Corinthians 9:15.

### **God's Willingness to Forgive**

1. In what way has God dealt with penitent sinners?

"He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities," Psalm 103:10.

2. Why has He dealt thus with men?

"Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him; for He knoweth our frame; He remembereth that we are dust," Psalm 103:13, 14.

3. What is God ready to do for all who call upon Him?

"For Thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon Thee," Psalm 86:5.

4. When Abraham asked God to spare Sodom if He should find ten righteous persons therein, what did the Lord say?

"And He said, Oh let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak yet but this once: Peradventure ten shall be found there. And He said, I will not destroy it for ten's sake,"



Genesis 18:32.

5. What prayer did Moses offer in behalf of Israel?

"Pardon, I beseech thee, the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of Thy mercy, and as Thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt even until now," Numbers 14:19.

6. What reply did the Lord immediately make?

"And the Lord said, I have pardoned according to Thy word," Numbers 14:20.

7. When David confessed his great sin to God, what was done in answer to that prayer?

"I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin," Psalm 32:5.

8. Does the Lord always forgive sins when they are properly confessed to Him?

"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John 1:9.

9. How full is the Lord's forgiveness, when one fulfills the conditions?

"Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon," Isaiah 55:7.

10. In what special manner has God shown His willingness to forgive the sinner?

"But God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us," Romans 5:8.

11. What does this wonderful manifestation on the part of God, vouchsafe to us?

"He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?" Romans 8:32.

12. Why has such provision been made?

"The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance," II Peter 3:9.

13. When the prodigal son in the parable, repented and turned toward home, what did his father do?

"And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him," Luke 15:20.

14. Upon the son's asking to be made only a hired servant what order was issued on behalf of the penitent one?

"But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring hither the fatted calf and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry," Luke 15:22-24.

15. Is God as willing to do for His children as earthly parents are for theirs?

"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?" Luke 11:13.

16. How many receive forgiveness from God?

"Every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that

knocketh it shall be opened," Matthew 7:8.

17. Does the Lord forget the cries of those who call upon Him?

"Can a woman forget her sucking child? . . . yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee," Isaiah 49:15.

### **Forgiving One Another**

1. What spirit should accompany prayer?

"And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses," Mark 11:25.

2. Will God pardon the unforgiving?

"But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses," Mark 11:26.

3. How shall we ask for pardon?

"And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors," Matthew 6:12.

4. How many times should we forgive?

"Then came Peter to Him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven," Matthew 18:21, 22.

5. In what parable are we taught forgiveness?

"Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done," Matthew 18:23-31.

6. In dealing with the erring, what feelings should actuate us?

"Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?" Matthew 18:33.

7. In forgiving, should we be satisfied with mere formalities?

"So likewise shall My heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses," Matthew 18:35.

8. How should we bestow mercy?

"Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that showeth mercy, with cheerfulness," Romans 12:8.

9. What should we do when a great sin is confessed?

"So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow," II Corinthians 2:7. The

forgiving spirit manifested by Joseph, who "kissed all his brethren, and wept upon them" (Genesis 45:15), notwithstanding the great wrong they had done him, furnishes an example worthy of imitation by all Christians.

10. In restoring the erring, what grace should we exemplify?

"Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted," Galatians 6:1.

11. In forgiving, whose example do we follow?

"Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye," Colossians 3:13.

12. Did God anciently forbid grudging?

"Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself: I am the Lord," Leviticus 19:18.

13. What says the New Testament?

"Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the Judge standeth before the door," James 5:9.

14. Does one forgive who holds a grudge?

Some, when pretending to forgive, say: "I can forgive, but I cannot forget," Such "hold a grudge."

15. What duty, recognized in the Lord's prayer, is the only one to which the Master adds a comment?

"And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors," "For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses," Matthew 6:12, 14, 15.

## **Unbelief**

1. What warning is given in the Bible concerning unbelief?

"Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God," Hebrews 3:12.

2. Is it possible to please God without faith?

"But without faith it is impossible to please Him; for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him," Hebrews 11:6.

3. Why did Christ not do many wonderful works in His own country?

"And He did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief," Matthew 13:58.

4. Why did Christ reprove the eleven?

"Afterward He appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen Him after He was risen," Mark 16:14.

5. Why were the Jewish people, or branches from the tame olive tree, broken off?

"Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear," Romans 11:20.

6. Concerning unbelief, what warning does God give the human family of today?

"For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in His goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off," Romans 11:21, 22.

7. On what grounds will the Jewish people be grafted in again?

"And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again," Romans 11:23.

8. Upon whom is the wrath of God coming?

"Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience [margin: unbelief]," Ephesians 5:6.

9. What did Christ say to Thomas because he did not believe the testimony of his brethren concerning His resurrection?

"Then saith He to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold My hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into My side: and be not faithless, but believing," John 20:27.

10. Faith and belief being parallel with each other, how may one acquire them?

"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God," Romans 10:17.

11. Why did many fail to enter into God's rest anciently?

"And to whom sware He that they should not enter into His rest, but to them that believed not? So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief," Hebrews 3:18, 19.

12. How are these unbelieving ones spoken of?

"But with whom was He grieved forty years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness?" Hebrews 3:17.

13. What lesson should we learn from their course?

"Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into His rest, any of you should seem to come short of it," Hebrews 4:1.

14. What should all labor to do?

"Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief," Hebrews 4:11.

15. What rest is spoken of here?

"For He spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all His works," Hebrews 4:4.

16. In the Revelation of Christ what is said of the unbelievers?

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death," Revelation 21:8.

Soldiers of Christ, arise,  
And put your armor on;  
Fight, for the battle will be ours;  
We fight to win a crown.

We fight not against flesh,

We wrestle not with blood;  
But with principalities and powers,  
And for the truth of God.

With wicked spirits, too,  
That in high places stand,  
Perverting of the Word of God,  
And say `tis by command.

## Holy and Sanctified

1. Can we be holy on this earth?

"Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect,"  
Matthew 5:48.

2. Can we be without fault?

"Be holy and without blame before Him [God] in love," Ephesians 1:4.

3. Can the Church be holy and without blemish?

"That He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish," Ephesians 5:27.

4. Are the commandments of God holy?

"Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good,"  
Romans 7:12.

5. Should we pray that men should become holy, and without blemish?

"And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ," I Thessalonians 5:23.

6. Can we see the Lord without being sanctified?

"Follow after peace with all men, and the sanctification without which no man shall see the Lord," Hebrews 12:14, R.V.

7. Is it God's will that we be sanctified?

"For this is the will of God, even your sanctification," I Thessalonians 4:3.

8. Can husbands be sanctified who are members of the church who do not love their wives?

"Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it; that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. That He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish," Ephesians 5:25, 26, 27.

9. How far back do holiness and sanctification date? Has it been a privilege to live holy and sanctified before this age?

"God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth," II Thessalonians 2:13.

10. Can we be holy of our own selves?

"But the Comforter, even the Holy Spirit, Whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things and bring to your remembrance all that I said unto you," John

14:26, R.V.

11. Can men who are interested in the world, and love the things of the world, receive this gift?

"Even the spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him," John 14:17.

12. Will God's children know they have this gift?

"But ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you," John 14:17. Is it not a fact that men who do not believe in holiness are of the world?

13. Will those who have this gift boast of themselves?

"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me," John 15:26.

14. Whom did Christ say the Holy Spirit would glorify?

"He shall glorify Me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall shew it unto you." John 16:14.

15. Will the Holy Spirit help us to understand the deep things of God?

"But God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God," I Corinthians 2:10.

16. Were the scriptures written by men or by the Holy Spirit?

"For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost," II Peter 1:21.

17. If we believe the holy scriptures what protecting care will the Holy Spirit be to us?

"In whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise," Ephesians 1:13.

18. Can we grieve this Spirit and miss the sealing benefits?

"Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption," Ephesians 4:30.

19. Is there danger in delaying to seek for this important gift?

"And the Lord said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man," Genesis 6:3.

20. If we fail to pray, will the Spirit remain with us?

"Cast me not away from Thy presence; and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me." Psalm 51:11.

21. Will those who do not pray for the Holy Spirit receive it?

"If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?" Luke 11:13.

22. How can we live without fault?

"The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance," Galatians 5:22, 23.

23. How can we impart it to others?

"The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us," Romans 5:5.

24. Will there be any confusion and difference in thoughts and speech, if all the brethren receive this gift?

"Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all

speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment," I Corinthians 1:10.

25. Can those who have faith be perfect without works?

"And by works was faith made perfect," James 2:22, last part of the verse.

"Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you," II Corinthians 13:11.

NOTE: The Holy Spirit is the mighty energy of the Godhead, the life and power of God flowing out from Him to all parts of the universe, and thus making a living connection between His throne and all creation.

## Baptism

1. What commission did Christ give His disciples?

"Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost," Matthew 28:19.

2. Before one is baptized, what is necessary for him to do?

"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you," Acts 2:38.

3. Toward whom must men repent?

"Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ," Acts 20:21.

4. Why should one repent toward God?

"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:23.

5. What is sin declared to be?

"Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law," I John 3:4.

6. Of what law is sin the transgression?

"For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous," I John 5:3.

7. What does the law first do to the sinner who wishes conversion?

"For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died," Romans 7:9.

8. Why is it necessary for one to die in the sense here represented?

"Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin," Romans 6:6.

9. If one dies, how is he to live again?

"Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him," Romans 6:8.

10. When one is dead with Christ, what should be done with him?

"Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life," Romans 6:4.

11. How is one to be buried in baptism?

"For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection," Romans 6:5.

12. For what purpose is one baptized?

"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost," Acts 2:38.

13. When baptized into Christ, what does one put on?

"For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ," Galatians 3:27.

14. After Philip had preached "Jesus" to the eunuch, what question did he ask Philip?

"And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?" Acts 8:36.

15. What reply did Philip make?

"And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest," Acts 8:37.

16. In administering this ordinance, where did Philip take the candidate?

"And they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him," Acts 8:38.

NOTE: This is a plain case of immersion.

17. Did Christ come up out of the water after He had been baptized?

"And Jesus, when He was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Him: and lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is My beloved Son, in Whom I am well pleased," Matthew 3:16, 17.

18. How many modes of baptism are recognized in the Bible?

"One Lord, one faith, one baptism," Ephesians 4:5.

19. How many were baptized, and added to the church on the day of Pentecost?

"Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls," Acts 2:41.

20. How many disciples were together on that occasion to engage in the work?

"And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred and twenty,)" Acts 1:15.

NOTE: Should the query arise, how so many as three thousand could be immersed in one day, it may be met by the fact that so large a number were present to administer the ordinance.

21. After repentance toward God and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, how long should one wait before being baptized?

"And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord," Acts 22:16.

22. What is necessary before being baptized?

"He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned," Mark 16:16.

23. How many of the jailer's family were baptized?



"And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway," Acts 16:33.

24. Were all the members of this family old enough to believe?

"And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house. And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house," Acts 16: 32, 34.

25. Should both men and women be baptized?

"But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women," Acts 8:12.

26. After being baptized, what should one do?

"If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God," Colossians 3:1.

### **Growth in Grace**

1. With what striking language does the apostle Peter close his writings?

"But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ," II Peter 3:18.

2. In what way may grace and peace be multiplied to those who believe?

"Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord," II Peter 1:2.

Through what source may we gain this knowledge?

"Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me," John 5:39.

4. To whom is God willing to give grace?

"But He giveth more grace. Wherefore He saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble," James 4:6.

5. Since we are told to grow in grace in what way may we make this growth?

"And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; and to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; and to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity," II Peter 1:5-7.

6. What is said of the person who entertains these things in their life?

"For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ," II Peter 1:8.

7. What is said of those who lack these things?

"But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins," II Peter 1:9.

8. What words of exhortation does the apostle Peter give?

"Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall," II Peter 1:10.

Yes, I hope by God's great mercy

We may meet, blood washed and white,  
To dwell forever in that city

That shall never know no night.  
Never hear the voice of weeping,  
    Never know the parting hand,  
Redeemed from former sorrows  
    Which beset the war cursed land.  
Those who came through tribulation  
    Clothed in white robes then shall be,  
Palms within their hands shall carry,  
    They shall no more sorrow see.  
No more heat shall be upon them  
    Every tear be wiped away,  
Dwell forever in the glory  
    Of that bright eternal day. -- Leota Neal

## Lesson 3

### Our Words

1. What direction is the righteous given to govern speech?

"Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth," Ephesians 4:29.

"But as He which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation," I Peter 1:15.

2. What precious promise is written for those who follow these directions?

"To him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the salvation of God," Psalm 50:23.

3. What is the happy condition of such?

"Whoso keepeth his mouth and his tongue keepeth his soul from troubles," Proverbs 21:23.

4. Does it show wisdom sometimes to say nothing?

"Even a fool, when he holdeth his peace, is counted wise: and he that shutteth his lips is esteemed a man of understanding," Proverbs 17:28.

5. What influence have kind words, and their opposite over others?

"A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger," Proverbs 15:1.

6. Is there life-giving power in pure speech?

"A wholesome tongue is a tree of life," Proverbs 15:4.

7. How deeply does the tongue of evil wound?

"There is that speaketh like the piercings of a sword," Proverbs 12:18.

8. What scathing words are spoken of the hypocritical tongue, and what sentence pronounced?

"Thou lovest all devouring words, O thou deceitful tongue. God shall likewise destroy thee forever, He shall take thee away, and pluck thee out of thy dwelling-place, and root thee out of the land of the living," Psalm 52:4, 5.

9. Contrast the abiding future of the truthful, with the brief continuance of such as speak falsely.

"The lip of truth shall be established for ever: but a lying tongue is but for a moment," Proverbs 12:19.

10. Are words a sure index of the intents of the heart?

"For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh," Matthew 12:34, last part of verse.

11. What is said of the man who offends not in word?

"If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body," James 3:2.

12. What is said of the professed Christian whose language is unbecoming?

"If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridled not his tongue, . . . this man's religion is vain," James 1:26.

13. Will our words have weight in the judgment?

"For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned," Matthew 12:37.

14. By these forcible scriptures, what startling truth is established?

"Death and life are in the power of the tongue," Proverbs 18:21.

15. What should be the constant prayer of each heart?

"Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in Thy sight, O Lord, my strength, and my Redeemer," Psalm 19:14.

### **Danger of Covetousness**

1. In what way has the Lord spoken of covetousness?

"And He said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth," Luke 12:15.

Covetous - "Inordinately desirous; excessively eager to obtain and possess; avaricious." --Webster.

2. What showed this principle to be strong in the rich man who had already more than he knew how well to take care of?

"And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry," Luke 12:18, 19.

3. But what did God say to him?

"But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?" Luke 12:20.

4. What conclusion does the Savior draw from this parable?

"So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God," Luke 12:21.

5. What does the apostle call covetousness?

"Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry," Colossians 3:5.

6. What does he say the things here enumerated have brought upon mankind?

"For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience," Colossians 3:6.

7. What did Judas's covetousness lead him to do?

"And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray Him (Christ) unto them.

And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray Him," Mark 14:10, 11.

8. How does the Lord regard the covetous man?

"For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the Lord abhorreth," Psalm 10:3.

9. Then can God trust such men to bear responsibilities in His work?

"Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men, such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness; and place such over them, to be rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens," Exodus 18:21; see also I Timothy 3:2, 3.

10. What is almost certain to follow the desire to be rich?

"But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition," I Timothy 6:9.

11. Will covetousness be one of the specially prevalent sins of the last days?

"This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers," II Timothy 3:1, 2.

12. What will these selfish ones be doing for themselves?

"Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days," James 5:3.

13. What can one do to eradicate this evil plant from the human heart?

"Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, Who giveth us richly all things to enjoy; . . . that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate," I Timothy 6:17, 18.

14. What effect does it have upon one to give of his means to help the cause of God?

"I have shewed you all things, how that so laboring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive," Acts 20:35; see also Proverbs 11:24, 25.

15. To whom does the money we have belong?

"The silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine, saith the Lord of hosts," Haggai 2:8.

16. How does God regard the spirit of sacrifice?

"I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God. But my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus," Philippians 4:18, 19.

17. Whom will Christ gather to Himself when He comes?

"He shall call to the heavens from above, and to the earth, that He may judge His people. Gather My saints together unto Me; those that have made a covenant with Me by sacrifice," Psalm 50:4, 5.

18. Heaven gave its choicest Treasure to redeem us, I Peter 1:18, 19. Ought we not to partake of the same spirit if we are God's children?

"And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together," Romans 8:17.

## **Purity**

1. Upon whom did Christ pronounce a blessing?

"Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God," Matthew 5:8.

2. Did He not say the impure mind was a violation of the seventh commandment?

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart," Matthew 5:27, 28.

3. Does not Paul teach the carnal mind to be a violation of all God's commandments?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of

God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

4. Concerning purity, what words of instruction were given Timothy by the apostle Paul?

"Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partakers of other men's sins: keep thyself pure," I Timothy 5:22.

5. If we want to purify our lives what must we follow?

"Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart," II Timothy 2:22.

6. To whom are all things pure?

"Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled," Titus 1:15.

7. What are God's people warned against?

"But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; neither filthiness, nor foolish talking nor jesting, which are not convenient; but rather giving of thanks," Ephesians 5:3, 4.

8. What are mentioned as works of the flesh?

"Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies," Galatians 5:19-20. See also verse 21.

9. Will those doing such things inherit the kingdom of God?

"They which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God," Galatians 5:21.

10. With whom are we warned not to keep company?

"But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat," I Corinthians 5:11.

11. Why are evil associates to be avoided?

"Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners," I Corinthians 15:33.

12. Instead of sanctioning evil what should we do?

"And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret," Ephesians 5:11, 12.

13. Should we allow corrupt words to pass out of our mouth?

"Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers," Ephesians 4:29.

14. Will the human family be called upon to give an account of the idle words they have been using?

"But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment," Matthew 12:36.

15. Will they be condemned because of the use of idle words?

"For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned," Matthew 12:37.

16. What does the Lord call upon the wicked man to do?

"Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for He will

abundantly pardon," Isaiah 55:7.

17. With what should one's mind be engaged?

"Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report, if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things. Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you," Philippians 4:8, 9.

## Riches

1. From what source comes the power to get wealth?

"But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth," Deuteronomy 8:18.

2. How may we honor God?

"Honor the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase," Proverbs 3:9.

3. What caution is given concerning riches?

"If riches increase, set not your heart upon them," Psalm 62:10, last clause.

4. Can riches be to our own hurt?

"There is a sore evil which I have seen under the sun, namely, riches kept for the owners thereof to their hurt," Ecclesiastes 5:13.

5. Give examples of this.

Matthew 19:21, 22; Mark 10:21, 22.

6. Is it easy for the rich to enter the kingdom of God?

"And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto His disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!" Mark 10:23.

7. What charge is given to the rich?

"Charge them that are rich in the world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, Who giveth us richly all things to enjoy," I Timothy 6:17.

8. What are they further instructed to do?

"They that do good, they that be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate; laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life," I Timothy 6:18, 19.

9. What dangers attend the getting of riches?

"But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition," I Timothy 6:9.

10. What makes rich without adding sorrow?

"The blessing of the Lord, it maketh rich, and He addeth no sorrow with it," Proverbs 10:22.

11. How are true riches obtained?

"By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honor, and life," Proverbs 22:4.

12. Does happiness depend on earthly possession?

"And He said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life

consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth," Luke 12:15.

13. Will silver or gold be able to deliver in the day of wrath?

"Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the day of the Lord's wrath," Zephaniah 1:18, first clause. See also Proverbs 11:4.

14. How did Moses esteem the reproach of Christ?

"Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for He had respect unto the recompense of reward," Hebrews 11:26.

15. Mention two classes of rich men.

"There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches," Proverbs 13:7.

16. Give an example of the first class.

Luke 12:16-20.

17. What lesson may we learn from this parable?

"So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God," Luke 12:21.

18. What fearful words are addressed to the rich oppressor?

"Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are motheaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days," James 5:2, 3.

19. How may the poor of this world be counted rich?

"Hearken, my beloved brethren, hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which He hath promised to them that love Him?" James 2:5.

20. Can we estimate the worth of the eternal inheritance?

"For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what He hath prepared for him that waiteth for Him," Isaiah 64:4.

My gracious Lord, I own Thy right  
To every service I can pay  
And call it my supreme delight  
To hear Thy dictates, and obey.

What is my being but for Thee,  
Its sure support, its noblest end?  
'Tis my delight Thy face to see,  
And serve the cause of such a Friend.

I would not sigh for worldly joy,  
Or to increase my worldly good;  
Nor future days nor powers employ  
To spread a sounding name abroad.

'Tis to my Saviour I would live,  
To Him who for my ransom died;



Nor could all worldly honor give  
Such bliss as crowns me at His side.

His work my hoary age shall bless  
When youthful vigor is no more;  
And my last hour of life confess  
His saving love, His glorious power.

### Duties of Parents and Children

1. What duty does God require of children?

"Honor thy father and thy mother," Exodus 20:12.

2. How are parents instructed to teach their children?

"And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up," Deuteronomy 6:6, 7.

3. How does God regard those parents who enforce obedience?

"For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He hath spoken of him," Genesis 18:19.

4. How should parents train their children?

"Train up [margin, catechize] a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it," Proverbs 22:6; see also Ephesians 6:4.

5. What encouragement have parents to correct their children? Does this result in happiness?

"Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul," Proverbs 29:17; 22:15.

6. What will result if correction is withheld?

"The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame," Proverbs 29:15.

7. By proper correction what profit will come to the child?

"Withhold not correction from the child; for if thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die. Thou shalt beat him with the rod, and shalt deliver his soul from hell," Proverbs 23:13, 14.

8. Is there danger of delaying correction too long?

"Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying," Proverbs 19:18.

9. Because a parent corrects his child, is it evidence that he does not love him?

"He that spareth his rod hateth his son; but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes," Proverbs 13:24.

10. In correcting the child, what should the father guard against?

"Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged," Colossians 3:21.

11. What consideration should the young ever show to the aged?

"Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honour the face of the old man, and fear thy God: I am the Lord," Leviticus 19:32.

12. Is the Lord pleased with children who obey their parents?

"Children, obey your parents in all things; for this is well pleasing unto the Lord," Colossians 3:20.

13. How long does the command to honor parents bind sons and daughters?

"Hearken unto thy father that begat thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old," Proverbs 23:22.

14. What is to be one of the prominent sins of the last days?

"For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy," II Timothy 3:2.

### **Child Training**

1. In what way should parents train their children?

"Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it," Proverbs 22:6.

2. What does Paul say about child training?

"And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord," Ephesians 6:4.

3. How diligently should parents teach their children the ways of God's word?

"And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up," Deuteronomy 6:6, 7; see Deuteronomy 11:19.

4. What life should we live before the young?

"Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity," I Timothy 4:12.

5. In the commandment what duty does God require of children?

"Honor thy father and thy mother," Exodus 20:12.

6. What promise is made to the child that will honor his or her parents, in the Lord?

"That thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee," Exodus 20:12.

7. In what way did Abraham train his children?

"Seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him? For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He hath spoken of him," Genesis 18:18, 19.

8. What is to be one of the prominent sins of the last days?

"For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy," II Timothy 3:2.

9. Should the child honor the old?

"Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honor the face of the old man, and

fear thy God: I am the Lord," Leviticus 19:32.

10. What are some good fruits of proper child training?

"Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul," Proverbs 29:17.

11. What will be the result if the child goes uncorrected?

"The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame," Proverbs 29:15.

12. Is there danger of delaying correction too long?

"Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying," Proverbs 19:18.

13. How may the parent show love for the child?

"He that spareth his rod hateth his son; but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes," Proverbs 13:24.

14. Whom does the Lord chasten?

"For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth," Hebrews 12:6.

15. At what age should one remember their Creator?

"Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them," Ecclesiastes 12:1.

### **Promises for the Children**

1. What is the first commandment which contains a promise?

"Honor thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise," Ephesians 6:2.

2. What is the promise connected with that commandment?

"Honor thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee," Exodus 20:12.

3. What promise is made to children if they will hearken to the Lord?

"Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the Lord," Psalm 34:11.

4. What is the fear of the Lord?

"The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do His commandments," Psalm 111:10.

5. How is a wise child even though poor, regarded by the Lord?

"Better is a poor and a wise child, than an old and foolish king, who will no more be admonished," Ecclesiastes 4:13.

6. What tender words did the Savior speak in behalf of children?

"Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 19:14.

7. What did He do to the children to show that He loved them?

"And He took them up in His arms, put His hands upon them, and blessed them," Mark 10:16.

8. How may all receive the Lord's blessings now?

"And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive,"  
Matthew 21:22.

9. If children do this, and as they grow older, keep all of God's commandments,  
what is promised?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree  
of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelations 22:14.

The day is fast approaching,  
The time is drawing near,  
When the King of kings in righteousness  
And glory shall appear.  
John saw the holy city,  
Descending from the throne,  
Prepared by Christ the Savior,  
To take His loved ones home.  
Oh may we all be ready  
With our wedding garments on,  
And shout the loud hosanna,  
When Christ our Lord shall come. -- Mrs. Lavina Leach

### **Meditation and Prayer**

1. What particular temptation is common to all men?

"But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed,"  
James 1:14.

2. What other foe does man have to contend with?

"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh  
about, seeking whom he may devour," I Peter 5:8.

3. Is there still another obstacle to man's spiritual advancement?

"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the  
world, the love of the Father is not in him," I John 2:15.

4. Can any one overcome these enemies in his own strength alone?

"I am the vine, ye are the branches. He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same  
bringeth forth much fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing," John 15:5.

5. What is required on our part if we are kept from our foes?

"Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but  
the flesh is weak," Matthew 26:41.

6. How much should we pray?

"Pray without ceasing," I Thessalonians 5:17.

7. On what occasions did David receive strength and encouragement?

"When I remember Thee upon my bed, and meditate on Thee in the night  
watches," Psalm 63:6.

8. What did he say of the man who was truly blessed?

"His delight is in the law of the Lord; and in His law doth he meditate day and  
night," Psalm 1:2.

9. Will such a condition of mind be distasteful to one who really loves God?

"My meditation of Him shall be sweet," Psalm 104:34.

10. How long ought one to continue this constant devotion?

"But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved," Matthew 24:13.

11. What is the special duty of those who live in the time when the Lord's coming is expected?

"Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is . . . Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning: lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch," Mark 13:33-37.

12. As the Lord's coming draws near, what will make the duty of prayer and watchfulness more imperative?

"Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time," Revelations 12:12.

13. Can we at that time have all the help we desire, to withstand our enemies?

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He will give it you," John 16:23.

14. If help does not come when it is first asked, what should one do?

"And shall not God avenge His own elect, which cry day and night unto Him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that He will avenge them speedily," Luke 18:7, 8. "Wait on the Lord: be of good courage, and He shall strengthen thine heart: wait, I say, on the Lord," Psalm 27:14.

15. What is promised to those who are found watching when the Lord comes?

"Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when He cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that He shall gird Himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them," Luke 12:37.

Though the way is rough and thorny  
Yet Thou art ever near:  
Thine arm of power sustains me,  
Thy voice alone can cheer.  
Keep me, my Savior, keep me  
Close to Thy riven side;  
And then I'm safe and happy,  
Whatever may betide.

### **Answer to Prayer**

1. Have we the assurance that we have a prayer hearing, and a prayer answering God?

"And this is the confidence that we have in Him, that, if we ask anything according to His will, He heareth us: and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him," I John 5:14, 15.

2. What is said of the prayer of the righteous?

"The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord: but the prayer of the upright is His delight," Proverbs 15:8.

3. What is said of the prayers of those who fight God's law?

"He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination," Proverbs 28:9.

4. In what way did Daniel seek to understand the dream of King Nebuchadnezzar?

"That they would desire mercies of the God of heaven concerning this secret; . . . " Daniel 2:18.

5. Did God hear, and answer the prayer of Daniel, and his fellows?

"Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel in a night vision," Daniel 2:19.

6. Did Daniel return thanks to God because his prayers had been answered?

"Then Daniel blessed the God of heaven, Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God forever and forever: for wisdom and might are His," Daniel 2:19, 20.

7. While Christ was here upon the earth, was it not His custom to return thanks to God, when his prayers had been answered?

"Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up His eyes, and said, Father, I thank Thee that Thou hast heard Me," John 11:41.

8. What thought does Paul express concerning prayer?

"Pray without ceasing," I Thessalonians 5:17.

9. And also of giving thanks?

"In every thing give thanks," I Thessalonians 5:18.

10. Is it not the will of God that we should do so?

"For this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you," I Thessalonians 5:18.

11. In what way did Elias pray before his prayers were answered?

"Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months," James 5:17.

12. Without faith will God answer prayer?

"But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing from the Lord," James 1:6, 7.

13. What does Christ say regarding the prayer of faith?

"Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them," Mark 11:24.

NOTE: It is clearly set forth in the Bible that one should ask according to the will of God if he expects God to hear and answer his petitions. See I John 5:14, 15; James 4:3; Romans 8:26.

14. Why does James say some prayers remain unanswered?

"Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts," James 4:3.

15. When we approach God in prayer through what medium should we come?

"And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by Him," Colossians 3:17, also see Ephesians 5:20.

NOTE: To those who read, and study this lesson, are these thoughts dedicated. If you want God to hear and answer your prayers you must meet the conditions of the Bible. You must be willing to walk in the light as it comes to you, having an honest heart, always seeking more truth, and be willing to say and do all the Lord requires of you.

Isaiah says in chapter 1:19, "If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land."

Other good thoughts are expressed in Isaiah 55:7; Proverbs 15:8, 9; I John 2:4-6 and I John 3:4-7. These scriptures apply to you. You should take heed and obey.

Sweet hour of prayer! Sweet hour of prayer!  
That calls me from a world of care,  
And bids me at my Father's throne,  
Make all my wants and wishes known;

In seasons of distress and grief,  
My soul has often found relief;  
And oft escaped the tempter's snare,  
By thy return, sweet hour of prayer!

Sweet hour of prayer! Sweet hour of prayer!  
Thy wings shall my petition bear,  
To Him whose truth and faithfulness  
Engage the waiting soul to bless;

And since He bids me seek His face,  
Believe His word and trust His grace,  
I'll cast on Him my every care,  
And wait for thee, sweet hour of prayer.

### **Importance of Prayer**

1. In what places would the apostle have men pray?

"I will therefore that men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting," I Timothy 2:8.

2. What is the promise to those who ask and seek for the things they need?

"Every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened," Matthew 7:8.

3. How does the Savior illustrate the willingness of Heaven to grant favors to those who ask?

"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him?" verse 11.

4. Why is it necessary to ask God for all these things?

"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning," James 1:17.

5. In what way does God draw nigh to us?

"Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts ye double minded," James 4:8.

6. How should one pray to God?

"I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also," I Corinthians 14:15.

7. With what should the prayers of the suppliant be mingled?

"Be careful for nothing: but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God," Philippians 4:6.

8. Should one in public repeat certain forms to be heard by men?

"But when ye pray, use not vain repetition, as the heathen do; for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking," Matthew 6:7.

9. What must necessarily accompany one's petition in order to please God?

"But without faith it is impossible to please Him; for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him," Hebrews 11:6.

10. How strong must this faith be?

"Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them," Mark 11:24.

11. When praying for forgiveness, how should one feel toward those who have in any way injured Him?

"And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses," verse 25.

12. Does it make any difference whether or not this injunction is carried out?

"But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses," verse 26.

13. How should one do when in affliction?

"Is any among you afflicted? let him pray," James 5:13.

14. Should one pray by himself alone?

"But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to Thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly," Matthew 6:6.

15. Was Jesus alone while praying?

"And when He had sent the multitudes away, He went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, He was there alone," Matthew 14:23.

16. But if it should happen that we were thrown into the presence of those who ridicule prayer or were forbidden to pray, should we give up our customary devotion?

"Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime," Daniel 6:10.

17. How many of Cornelius' family feared God and prayed to Him?

"A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms



to the people, and prayed to God always," Acts 10:2.

18. Did the apostolic believers have gatherings for prayer?

"And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary, the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying," Acts 12:12.

19. How often does the apostle exhort the church to pray?

"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit," Ephesians 6:18.

20. How does he express himself on this point elsewhere?

"Pray without ceasing," I Thessalonians 5:17.

21. In a certain parable concerning an importunate widow who besought an unjust judge to assist her against her enemies, what reason did the judge give for finally heeding her petition?

"Though I fear not god, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me," Luke 18:4, 5.

22. How does the Savior apply the parable?

"And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge His own elect, which cry day and night unto Him, though He bear long with them?" verses 6, 7.

23. What does the Savior conclude in answer to His own question on this point?

"I tell you that He will avenge them speedily," Luke 18:8, first part.

24. But what question does the Savior immediately ask, which shows He felt doubtful that such strong faith would exist when He is about to come?

"Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall He find faith on the earth?" verse 8, latter part.

25. What is the parable's purpose?

"And He spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint," verse 1.



## Lesson 4

### What is Sin and Who are Sinners?

1. From a Bible standpoint, who are said to be sinners?

"Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin," John 8:34.

2. In what way does the apostle John speak of the same thing?

"Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law," I John 3:4.

3. What is the Bible definition for the word sin?

"For sin is the transgression of the law," I John 3:4.

4. Of what law is John speaking?

"For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous," I John 5:3.

NOTE: By the above scriptures we learn that sin is the transgression of God's law, which was written upon two tables of stone.

5. How far back in the history of the world, was sin the transgression of God's law?

"And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him," Genesis 4:8.

6. Are there then instances where the people committed sin by violating God's law?

"There dwelt men of Tyre also therein, which brought fish, and all manner of ware and sold on the Sabbath unto the children of Juda, and in Jerusalem. Then I contended with the nobles of Juda and said unto them. What evil thing is this that ye do, and profane the Sabbath day?" Nehemiah 13:16, 17.

NOTE: By the above scriptures, we learn, that anciently it was sin to violate any of God's commandments. Here we find the fourth, and sixth spoken of, as being sin to violate them.

As God is no respecter of persons, Acts 10:34, He will hold the violators of any of the ten precepts guilty of committing sin, since the "wages of sin is death," Romans 6:23.

7. In Leviticus what is sin said to be?

"Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, If a soul shall sin through ignorance against any of the commandments of the Lord concerning things which ought not to be done, and shall do against any of them," Leviticus 4:2.

NOTE: The above scripture would imply that one should not violate any of the ten precepts.

8. Is this in harmony with James?

"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point is guilty of all," James 2:10.

9. Of what law is James speaking?

"For He that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill, Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law," James 2:11.

NOTE: James is talking of the ten precepts, written by God upon two tables of stone, and also, that one is guilty of sin when he violates any one of the ten.

10. How did Christ talk to the woman taken in adultery?

"She said, No man Lord, and Jesus said unto her, neither do I condemn thee: Go, and sin no more," John 8:11.

NOTE: The words, "Go and sin no more," would imply, that she had been committing sin, by violating the commandment which said, "Thou shalt not commit adultery," see Exodus 20:14.

11. By what is the knowledge of sin?

"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin," Romans 3:20.

12. By what did Paul gain a knowledge of sin?

"What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet," Romans 7:7. See also Exodus 20:17.

13. What is the strength of sin?

"The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law," I Corinthians 15:56.

14. What does John say of unrighteousness?

"All unrighteousness is sin," I John 5:17.

15. What are the ten commandments declared to be?

"My tongue shall speak of Thy word; for all Thy commandments are righteousness," Psalms 119:172.

NOTE: If all of God's commandments are righteousness, as the Psalmist declares they are, then the opposite would be unrighteousness. Or in other words, if it is righteous not to kill, neither to take God's name in vain, then one would be unrighteous if he would do those things. The same method will apply to each of the ten precepts, the Sabbath command included.

16. By obeying God's law, in what condition will one be?

"The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple," Psalms 19:7.

## **The Law of God**

1. To what place did the Lord descend when He wrote the ten commandment law on tables of stone?

"And be ready against the third day: for the third day the Lord will come down in the sight of all the people upon Mount Sinai," Exodus 19:11.

2. What extraordinary events happened the third day when God came down upon the mount?

"And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceedingly loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled," Exodus 19:16.

3. What effect did the presence of God have upon Mount Sinai when He descended to give this law?

"And Mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the Lord descended upon it in fire; and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly," Exodus 19:18.

4. When God had finished talking with Moses upon the mountain, what did He give Moses?

"And He gave unto Moses, when He had made an end of communion with him upon Mount Sinai, two tables of testimony, tables of stone written with the finger of God," Exodus 31:18.

5. What did Moses do after he received these tables of stone from the hands of God?

"And Moses turned and went down from the mount: and the two tables of testimony were in his hand: the tables were written on both their sides; on the one side and on the other were they written," Exodus 32:15.

6. What further is said of these two tables of stone and of the nature of the writings upon them?

"And the tables were the work of God and the writing was the writing of God, graven upon the tables," Exodus 32:16.

7. How many precepts or commandments were contained in this law which was given to man written with the finger of God?

"And He wrote on the tables, according to the first writing, the ten commandments," Deuteronomy 10:4.

8. What was the nature of these ten commandments, contained in this law of God, and what evils did they forbid man to commit?

### **The Ten Commandments**

I. "Thou shalt have no other gods before Me,"

II. "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My commandments,"

III. "Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; for the Lord will not hold

him guiltless that taketh His name in vain,"

IV. "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labor, and do all thy work. But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maid-servant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it,"

V. "Honor thy father and thy mother; that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee,"

VI. "Thou shalt not kill,"

VII. "Thou shalt not commit adultery,"

VIII. "Thou shalt not steal,"

IX. "Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor,"

X. "Thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's wife, nor his man-servant, nor his maid-servant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor anything that is thy neighbor's." -- Exodus 20th chapter.

### **The Two Laws Contrasted**

The following facts show the manifest distinction between the moral and the ceremonial laws:

#### Moral Law

1. Was spoken by God. Deuteronomy 4:12.
2. Was written by God on "tables of stone," Exodus 24:12.
3. Was "right," "true," and "good," Nehemiah 9:13.
4. Was a law, "which if a man do, he shall even live in it," Ezekiel 20:11, 13, 21.
5. Was a "perfect" law, Psalms 19:7.
6. Christ did not "come to destroy" it. Matthew 5:17.
7. He came to "magnify" it and make it "honorable," Isaiah 42:21.
8. Every "jot" and "tittle" of this shall stand "till heaven and earth pass" away, Matthew 5:18.
9. Of this, Christ says, "Whosoever, therefore, shall break one of these least commandments . . . shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 5:19.
10. Was a "law of liberty," James 2:12.
11. Is "established" through faith in Christ, Romans 3:31.
12. "Is spiritual," Romans 7:14.
13. Is "holy," and "good," Romans 7:12.

14. Was "written with the finger of God," and is called the "royal law," Exodus 31:18; James 2:8.

15. Was proclaimed by Jehovah Himself "and He added no more," Deuteronomy 5:22.

16. Is the "commandments of God," which are brought to view in the third angel's message (Revelation 14:12), and which will insure to those who observe them a "right to the tree of life," Revelation 22:14.

#### Ceremonial Law

1. Was spoken by Moses, Deuteronomy 1:1-6.
2. Was written by Moses "in a book," Deuteronomy 31:24.
3. "Was not good," Ezekiel 20:25.
4. Was a law "whereby they should not live," Ezekiel 20:25.
5. "Made nothing perfect," Hebrews 7:19.
6. He "abolished" it, Ephesians 2:15.
7. He took it "out of the way" at his death. Colossians 2:14.
8. Was only "added till," and passed away, when the Seed came, Galatians 3:19.
9. Of the other, the apostle said, "We gave no such commandment" that ye should "keep the law," Acts 15:24.
10. Was a "yoke of bondage," Galatians 5:1.
11. "Was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ," Galatians 3:24, 25.
12. Is "the law of a carnal commandment," Hebrews 7:16.
13. Is "enmity against us" and "contrary to us," Ephesians 2:15; Colossians 2:14.
14. Was the "handwriting of ordinances," Colossians 2:14.
15. "Was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator," Galatians 3:19.
16. Is "the law of commandments contained in ordinances," Ephesians 2:15, "a shadow of good things to come," Hebrews 10:1, and was disannulled "for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof," Hebrews 7:18.

#### **Importance of Sound Doctrine**

1. Does it make any difference what man believes, if he is only sincere?  
"God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth," II Thessalonians 2:13; Joshua 24:14.
2. How may we determine the truthfulness of any doctrine?  
"Prove all things; hold fast that which is good," I Thessalonians 5:21; Isaiah 8:20.
3. Upon what foundation should every religious tenet rest?  
"And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone," Ephesians 2:20; I Corinthians 3:11.
4. What is mentioned first in the list of those things for which all Scripture is profitable?  
"All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine," II Timothy 3:16.
5. What advice is given to Timothy while preparing for the gospel ministry?  
"Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine . . . Take heed

unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them," I Timothy 4:13, 16.

6. What remarkable charge is given him as he begins his public work?

"I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom; preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine," II Timothy 4:1, 2.

7. Why is this duty so imperative?

"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; and they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables," verses 3, 4.

8. How was Titus instructed to teach and in what was he to be a pattern?

"But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine . . . in all things, shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity," Titus 2:1, 7.

9. What is the power of sound doctrine?

"Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers," Titus 1:9.

10. What danger attends false teaching?

"Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some," II Timothy 2:18.

11. Who are the disciples of Jesus, and what gracious work is wrought for them?

"If ye continue in My word, then are ye My disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free," John 8:31, 32.

12. Through what are they sanctified?

"Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth," John 17:17.

13. Will God accept the homage of such as deliberately teach contrary to His will?

"But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men," Matthew 15:9.

14. Can we close our ears to the truth, and remain innocent?

"He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination," Proverbs 28:9.

15. To whom will the Lord reveal His will, and lead them into the light?

"If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of Myself," John 7:17, Psalm 25:9, John 8:12.

16. What will be the fate of the spiritually blind teacher, and of those whom he presumes to teach?

"Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch," Matthew 15:14.

17. To whom will the gates of the heavenly city at length be opened?

"Open ye the gates, that the righteous nation which keepeth the truth may enter in," Isaiah 26:22; Revelation 22:14.

## **Sin Defined**

1. How do we know what sin is?



"What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law," Romans 7:7.

2. To what law did Paul refer?

"For I had not known lust, except the law had said, thou shall not covet," Romans 7:7.

NOTE: Paul referred to the law that said, "Thou shalt not covet," and this commandment is the tenth one of the law of ten commandments, which were spoken by God Himself, and were written by Him on two tables of stone.

3. What does Paul say of the condition of this law?

"Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good," Romans 7:12.

4. Is this a spiritual law?

"For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin," verse 14.

5. What other quality has this law in addition to being "holy, just and good?"

"The law of the Lord is perfect converting the soul," Psalm 19:7.

NOTE: A converted (changed) man will be careful to observe all the precepts of this law, not only in deed, but in thought.

6. What does the wise man tell us is the whole duty of man?

"Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man," Ecclesiastes 12:13.

7. Do we have this perfect law referred to elsewhere in the Bible, and is there a blessing for keeping it?

"But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed," James 1:25.

8. To what law does James refer when speaking of the "law of liberty?"

"For He that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill thou art become a transgressor of the law," James 2:11.

NOTE: God is the one to whom James refers, because He is the one that spake these words.

9. May any of the ten commandments be broken and the violator be guiltless?

"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all," James 2:10.

10. By what will mankind be judged in the last day?

"So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty," verse 12.

11. What is one step in showing our relation to the law of ten commandments?

Christ, in explaining the precept, "Thou shalt not kill," gives the following

instructions. "Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the alter, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the alter, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift," Matthew 5:23, 24.

NOTE: We learn by this that God looks at the intents of our heart, and the thoughts we entertain within our minds. In order to be found guiltless in the eyes of God we must have a pure mind, then our lives will be pleasing in the eyes of God.

12. What does the apostle Paul say of the one who is carnally minded?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

13. What will be the final end of those who are carnally minded?

"For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace," verse 6.

14. What if one turns away from hearing the law?

"He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination," Proverbs 28:9.

15. What did Christ say in regard to obedience to the ten commandments being necessary to obtain eternal life?

"And, behold, one came and said unto Him, Good Master what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And He said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments," Matthew 19:16, 17.

16. How long was this law to remain in force?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

17. As life is conditional upon obedience to the law, what is necessary in order to enter the kingdom of God, besides fellowship with Jesus?

"Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 5:19.

18. What other message did Christ give?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

19. What is said of those who hunger and thirst after righteousness?

"Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled," Matthew 5:6.

20. Regarding righteousness, what is said of the law of God?

"My tongue shall speak of Thy word: for all Thy commandments are righteousness," Psalm 119:172.

Some day, some day, some glad sweet day;  
I shall with joy His face behold,  
Some day shall safe at anchor lay;  
Some day shall walk the streets of gold.

## Lesson 5

### The Lord's Day

1. What does Christ say of the Sabbath?

"And He said unto them, the Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath," Mark 2:27.

2. What distinguishes the seventh day of the week from the six working days?

"And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made," Genesis 2:2.

3. Besides resting on the seventh day, what did God pronounce upon it?

"And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it," verse 3.

4. Why did God bless and sanctify this day?

"Because that in it He rested from all His work which God created and made," verse 3.

NOTE: The Sabbath was a part of creation, by God Himself, blessing, sanctifying and resting upon this particular day, and it stands as a memorial of the great creative work of the first week of time. The only way to change the Sabbath day, is for the creation to be gone through again, and it is not likely that such will ever be the case.

5. Is it possible for anything to be added to, or for anything to be taken from what God has done?

"I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be forever: nothing can be put to it, nor anything taken from it: and God doeth it that men should fear before Him," Ecclesiastes 3:14.

6. Have we any record where the Sabbath was ever kept prior to the giving of the law on Sinai?

"And Moses said, Eat that today; for today is a Sabbath unto the Lord; today ye shall not find it in the field. Six days ye shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is the Sabbath, in it there shall be none. See, for that the Lord hath [in the past] given you the Sabbath, therefore He giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day," Exodus 16:25, 26 and 29.

NOTE: These things happened several days prior to the giving of the law on Sinai, and it is a fact that cannot be denied.

7. What law did God give for its observance?

"Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labor, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord Thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it," Exodus 20:8-11.

8. What statement is made herein, which has never been made of any other day?

"The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God," verse 10.

9. In what way did the Lord require the Sabbath to be kept?

"Thus saith the Lord; take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the Sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem; neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the Sabbath day, neither do ye any work, but hallow ye the Sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers," Jeremiah 17:21, 22.

10. How does Isaiah tell us to keep the Sabbath?

"If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My Holy day; and call the Sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shalt honor Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words," Isaiah 58:13.

11. What is said of the person that keeps the Sabbath?

"Blessed is the man that doeth this, and the son of man that layeth hold on it; that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and keepeth his hand from doing any evil," Isaiah 56:2.

12. What is said of the Gentiles that keep the Sabbath?

"Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the Lord, to serve Him, and to love the name of the Lord, to be His servants, every one that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of My covenant; Even them will I bring to My holy mountain, and make them joyful in My house of prayer," Isaiah 56:6, 7.

13. What did the Lord say the Sabbath would be between Him and His people?

"I am the Lord your God; walk in My statutes, and keep My judgments, and do them: and hallow My Sabbaths: and they shall be a sign between Me and you, that ye may know that I am the Lord your God," Ezekiel 20:19, 20.

14. What was Christ's attitude toward the Sabbath?

"And He came to Nazareth where He had been brought up: and, as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read," Luke 4:16.

15. How was Christ connected with the Sabbath day?

"Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath," Mark 2:28.

16. What work is permissible on the Sabbath?

"And He was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to Him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity; And He laid His hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God," Luke 13:10-13.

17. In Matthew, how does Christ express the same thought?

"And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked Him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse Him. And He said unto them, What man shall there be among you that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days," Matthew 12:10-12.

NOTE: Or in other words, it is right and proper to do works of charity to aid the

sick and suffering, and even perform acts of mercy in relieving the suffering of animals on that day when necessity demands it.

Some day full soon, sweet Eden's bowers;  
May burst upon my raptured sight,  
And I shall see the glory land:  
Bathed in the Lamb's eternal light.  
For He who braved the storm king's wrath;  
And stilled the waves of Galilee;  
Will safely guide my storm tossed bark,  
Across life's dark tempestuous sea.  
And though it hath been well revealed;  
Where heaven's gold paved highways be;  
I know that I shall one day dwell;  
With Him whose blood was shed for me. -- Elder Lewis Buchtel

I love the holy Sabbath day  
It does me good to rest  
I know I then my Lord obey  
Because that day he blest.  
And oh, the language is so plain  
That all may understand,  
Why is it people will not see  
And keep this great command?  
And Jesus taught the people once  
That they should surely pray,  
That their flight be not in winter  
Neither on the Sabbath day;  
For they must leave Jerusalem,  
And to the mountains flee  
When the cruel Roman army came  
To take them all away.

### **Sabbath Observance**

1. In the beginning what was upon the face of the deep?  
"And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters," Genesis 1:3.
2. Since darkness covered the deep, how came the light?  
"And God said, Let there be light," Genesis 1:3.
3. What was the result?  
"And there was light," Genesis 1:3.
4. After light had been brought about what great work did God perform?  
"And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness," Genesis 1:4.

5. What name was given the light, and also the darkness?

"And god called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night," Genesis 1:5.

6. By adding the darkness and the light together what do they make?

"And the evening [dark] and the morning [light] were the first day," Genesis 1:5.

7. What words of Christ would teach that it takes both darkness and the light to make one day as set apart by God?

"And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny Me thrice," Mark 14:30.

8. Have we any proof that these things happened in the dark part of the day?

"He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night," John 13:30.

NOTE: Here we have two statements proving beyond any question of doubt that the night is included in the day, or in other words, it takes both darkness and light to make one complete day, and that this is what God had reference to when He said, "The evening and the morning were the first day,"

9. According to the Bible when does the evening begin?

"But at the place which the Lord thy God shall choose to place his name in, there thou shalt sacrifice the passover at even, at the going down of the sun, at the season that thou camest forth of Egypt," Deuteronomy 16:6.

10. Upon one occasion, at what time of day were the sick brought to Christ?

"And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto Him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils," Mark 1:32.

NOTE: These scriptures, as well as many others teach, that the going down of the sun is the beginning of the evening, as well as the beginning of the day.

11. Do we find other scriptures teaching the going down of the sun to be the beginning of the evening?

Answer. Yes, Please read the following Scriptures: II Chronicles 18:34; Numbers 9:21; Leviticus 22:6,7; Deuteronomy 23:11; Judges 14:12-18.

12. Concerning the beginning of the Sabbath what does Nehemiah say?

"And it came to pass, that when the gates of Jerusalem began to be dark before the Sabbath, I commanded that the gates should be shut, and charged that they should not be opened till after the Sabbath: and some of my servants set I at the gates, that there should no burden be brought in on the Sabbath day," Nehemiah 13:19.

13. Which day of the week is the Sabbath day?

"But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God," Exodus 20:10.

14. When does this day commence, and at what time does it close?

"From even unto even, shall ye celebrate your Sabbath," Leviticus 23:32, last part of verse.

15. For how long did God say they should keep the Sabbath?

"Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations for a perpetual covenant," Exodus 31:16.

16. What does Christ say of breaking the commandments?

"Whosoever therefore shall break one of the least of these commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven," Matthew 5:19.

"WHOSOEVER KEEPETH THE WHOLE LAW, YET OFFENDS IN ONE POINT IS GUILTY OF ALL"

### **The Crime of the Dark Ages**

1. According to the prophet, what was to be the attitude of Christ toward His Father's law?

"The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; He will magnify the law, and make it more honorable," Isaiah 42:21.

2. According to Christ, would any part of the law be done away?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

NOTE: Since we find the heaven and earth here yet, we are compelled to admit that the law of God is yet binding upon the human family, and according to Christ, it will be so long as the heaven and earth are here. These words are in accordance with the prophet when he said, "He will magnify the law and make it honorable,"

3. In connection with the four universal empires as they are pictured to us by the prophet Daniel, what power would arise?

"I considered the horns and behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots; and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of a man, and a mouth speaking great things," Daniel 7:8.

4. What would be one part of the work this power would carry out?

"I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them," verse 21.

NOTE: This power is recognized to be the Papacy, or Rome in its Papal form. The Papacy truly made war on the people of God to the extent of nearly sixty million suffered death in all ways possible for them to be put to death.

5. What other noted work would this power think to do?

"And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws; and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time," verse 25.

6. What power claims to have changed the law of God?

Answer: The Papacy.

7. What part of the law of God has the Papacy thought to change?

Answer: The fourth, or Sabbath commandment.

NOTE: This power has thought to change a commandment given by God Himself, and one that Christ said would last so long as the heavens and the earth were here.

8. By whom, and in what year do we find the first Sunday law of history?

Answer: By Constantine, and in the year 321 A.D.

9. What does the Encyclopedia Britannica say of the first Sunday law?

"The earliest recognition of the observance of Sunday as a legal duty is a constitution of Constantine in 321 A.D., enacting that all courts of justice, inhabitants of towns, and workshops were to be at rest on Sunday (venerable day of the sun) with an exception in favor of those engaged in agricultural labor," Encyclopedia Britannica, art. Sunday.

10. What do other works say of the same power, and its relation to the institution of Sunday as a rest day?

"Constantine the Great made a law for the whole empire (A.D. 321) that Sunday should be kept as a day of rest in all cities and towns; but he allowed the country people to follow their work," Encyclopedia American, art. Sabbath.

11. What did Constantine's law require?

"Let all judges and town people, and the occupation of all trades rest on the venerable day of the sun; but let all those who are situated in the country, freely and at full liberty attend to the business of agriculture; because it often happens that no other day is so fit for sowing corn and planting vines; lest, the critical moment being let slip, men should lose the commodities granted by Heaven."

12. Does the Papacy acknowledge that it has changed the Sabbath?

Answer: It does.

"Question: How prove you that the church hath power to command feasts and holy days?"

"Answer: By the very act of changing the Sabbath into Sunday, which protestants allow of; and therefore they fondly contradict themselves by keeping Sunday strictly, and breaking most other feast days commanded by the same church," Abridgment of Christian Doctrine, by Rev. Henry Tuberville, D.D., of Douay College, France (1649), page 58.

"Question: Have you any other way of proving that the church has power to institute festivals of precept?"

"Answer: Had she not such power, she could not have done that in which all modern religionists agree with her, she could not have substituted the observance of Sunday, the first day of the week, for the observance of Saturday, the seventh day, a change for which there is no scriptural authority," A Doctrinal Catechism, by Stephen Keenan, page 174.

The Catholic Church of its own infallible authority created Sunday a holy day to take the place of the Sabbath of the old law. Kansas City Catholic, February 9, 1893.

"The Catholic Church . . . by virtue of her divine mission, changed the day from Saturday to Sunday," Catholic Mirror, Official organ of Cardinal Gibbons, September 23, 1893.

"Question: Which is the Sabbath day?"

"Answer: Saturday is the Sabbath day,"

"Question: Why do we observe Sunday instead of Saturday?"

"Answer: We observe Sunday instead of Saturday because the Catholic Church, in the Council of Laodicea (A.D. 336) transferred the solemnity from Saturday to Sunday,"



The Converts Catechism of Catholic Doctrine, by Peter Gelermann, C. SS. R., page 50, third edition, 1913, a work which received the "apostolic blessing" of Pope Pius X, January 25, 1910.

What was done at the council of Laodicea was but one of the steps by which the change of the Sabbath was effected. This we learn to be a fact from the standpoint of their own works as well as from other sources.

13. Do Catholic authorities acknowledge that there is no command in the Bible for the sanctification of Sunday?

Answer: They do.

NOTE: "You may read the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, and you will not find a single line authorizing the sanctification of Sunday. The Scriptures enforce the religious observance of Saturday, a day which we never sanctify," -- Cardinal Gibbons, in *The Faith of Our Fathers*, edition 1892, page 111.

"Sunday is a Catholic institution, and its claims to observance can be defended only on Catholic principles . . . . From beginning to end of Scripture there is not a single passage that warrants the transfer of weekly public worship from the last day of the week to the first," Catholic Press (Sydney, Australia), August 25, 1900.

14. Do Protestant writers acknowledge the same thing?

Answer: They do.

NOTE: "Is there no express commandment for observing the first day of the week as Sabbath, instead of the seventh day? -- None whatever. Neither Christ, nor His apostles, nor the first Christians celebrated the first day of the week instead of the seventh as the Sabbath," -- *New York Weekly Tribune*, May 24, 1900.

"The Scriptures nowhere call the first day of the week the Sabbath . . . There is no Scriptural authority for so doing, nor of course any Scriptural obligation," -- *The Watchman* (Baptist).

"The observance of the first instead of the seventh day rests on the testimony of the church, and the church alone," -- *Hobart Church News* (Episcopalian), July 2, 1894.

15. How did this change in observance of days come about, suddenly or gradually?

Answer: Gradually.

NOTE: "The Christian church made no formal, but a gradual and almost unconscious transfer of the one to the other," -- *The Voice From Sinai*, by Archdeacon F.W. Farrar, page 167.

This of itself is evidence that there was no divine command for the change of the Sabbath.

16. For how long a time was the seventh day Sabbath observed in the Christian church?

Answer: For many centuries. In fact, its observance has never wholly ceased in the Christian church.

NOTE: Mr. Morer, a learned clergyman of the Church of England, says: "The primitive Christians had a great veneration for the Sabbath, and spent the day in devotion and sermons. And it is not to be doubted that they derived this practice from the apostles themselves," -- Dialogues on the Lord's Day, page 189.

Prof E. Brerwood, of Gresham College, London (Episcopal), says: "The Sabbath was religiously observed in the Eastern church three hundred years and more after our Savior's passion," -- Learned Treatise of the Sabbath, page 77.

The historian Socrates, who wrote about the middle of the fifth century, says: "Almost all the churches throughout the world celebrate the sacred mysteries on the Sabbath of every week, yet the Christians of Alexandria and at Rome, on account of some ancient tradition, refused to do this," -- Ecclesiastical History, book 5, chapter 22.

Sozomen, a historian of the same period, writes: "The people of Constantinople, and of several other cities, assembled together on the Sabbath as well as on the next day; which custom is never observed from Rome," Ecclesiastical History, book 7, chapter 19.

All this would have been inconceivable and impossible had there been a divine command given for the change of the Sabbath. The last two quotations also show that Rome led in the apostasy and in the change of the Sabbath.

17. What do Catholics say of the observance of Sunday by Protestants?

"It was the Catholic Church which, by the authority of Jesus Christ, has transferred this rest to the Sunday in remembrance of the resurrection of our Lord. Thus the observance of Sunday by the Protestants is an homage they pay, in spite of themselves, to the authority of the Catholic Church," Plain Talk About Protestantism of Today, by Mgr. Segur, page 213.

18. What kind of worship does the Savior call that which is not according to God's commandments?

"But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men," Matthew 15:9.

The seventh day this book defends,  
And to the searching mind it lends  
A helping hand, to learn the way,  
Which is to keep God's Sabbath day.

For when the six days' work was done,  
And all was finished 'neath the sun,  
The Lord Himself was pleased to rest;  
And hence the seventh day He blest.

The first that dawned o'er all the land,  
Just fresh from the Creator's hand,  
The Sabbath law God therefore laid,  
The Sabbath day for man was made.

The seventh day the Lord hath blest,  
And said that in it we should rest,  
Can we despise His holy day,  
And from His Sabbath turn away?

God's memorial then we'll keep,  
And thus remember His great work,  
His ten commandments we can't obey,  
Unless we keep the seventh day. -- J. A. Nugent

### **The Lord's Day [cont'd.]**

1. On what day was John in the spirit while on the Isle of Patmos?  
"I was in the spirit on the Lord's day," Revelation 1:10.
2. What day does Christ say He is Lord of?  
"Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath," Mark 2:28.
3. Which day is the Sabbath of the Lord?  
"But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God," Exodus 20:10.
4. For whom was the Sabbath or Lord's day made?  
"And He said unto them: The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath," Mark 2:27.
5. In what age of the world was the Sabbath or Lord's day made?  
"Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them, and on the seventh day God ended His work which he had made, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which he had made," Genesis 2:1, 2.
6. Did not God bless and sanctify the seventh day?  
"And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it," Genesis 2:3.
7. Why did God bless and sanctify the seventh day?  
"Because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made," Genesis 2:3.
8. In the decalogue what is the seventh day called?  
"Six days shalt thou labor and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God," Exodus 20:9, 10.
9. What does Isaiah, speaking for God through the Holy Ghost, call the seventh day Sabbath?  
"If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My Holy Day," Isaiah 58:13.
10. Was Christ an observer of His own day?  
"And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up: and as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read," Luke 4:16.
11. On what day of the week did Christ arise from the dead?  
"In the end of [R. V. or late on] the Sabbath, as it began to dawn [or draw on] toward the first day of the week," Matthew 28:1.

NOTE: By the above scriptures we not only learn that the Sabbath day is the Lord's day, but we also learn that it was Christ's custom to observe that day, and He also arose from the dead on the Sabbath, or Lord's day.

12. Did the followers of Christ keep the Sabbath or Lord's day?

"And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment," Luke 23:56.

13. Did they observe it after His resurrection?

"And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three Sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures," Acts 17:2. See also Acts 13:14, 42, 44; 16:13; 18:1-4, 11.

14. Since Paul and Christ were both Sabbath day observers, should we be followers of them?

"Be ye followers of me, [Paul] even as I also am of Christ," I Corinthians 11:1.

15. Was Christ's life to be the light of the world?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world; he that followeth Me shall not be in darkness, but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

Who is on the Lord's side,  
Always true?  
There's a right and wrong side,  
Where stand you?  
Thousands on the wrong side  
Choose to stand,  
Still 'tis not the strong side,  
True and grand.  
Come and join the Lord's side:  
Ask you why?  
Tis the only safe side  
By and by. -- Selected

### **The Jewish Sabbath and Mosaical Law Abolished**

1. In the beginning, what record is given of the first day of the week?

"And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: And God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day," Genesis 1:3-5.

NOTE: By reading the first five verses of Genesis 1 we learn, that God worked upon the first day of time. It was on this day that light was brought about.

2. In the New testament, how many times do we find the first day of the week mentioned?

Answer: Eight.

3. Do we find it spoken of as a holy or sacred day?

Answer: No.

4. Did Christ use the words first day?

Answer: He did not.

5. How does Matthew speak of the first day?

"In the end of [R.V. late on] the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre," Matthew 28:1.

6. How does Mark speak of the same first day?

"And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun. Now when Jesus was risen, early the first day of the week, He appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom He had cast seven devils," Mark 16:2, 9.

7. What does Luke say of the same day?

"Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them," Luke 24:1.

8. Concerning a visit to the sepulchre what does John say?

"The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre," John 20:1.

9. Does John tell of a first day meeting of Christ and His disciples?

"The same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you," John 20:19. Also Luke 24:29.

NOTE: By this scripture we learn that Christ met with his disciples a little while, real late on the first day of the week where they were assembled for fear of the Jews. If the reader will turn to the Bible and read Acts 1:13 and Acts 2:44 they will find it to be the custom of the disciples to live together, and beyond any question of doubt they were thus assembled when Christ appeared to them. Another thing, if Christ meeting with them was a sign of a holy day, we would gather from John 21:1-5, that they also had a holy fishing day.

10. In Acts 20 what do we find regarding the first day of the week?

"And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight," Acts 20:7.

NOTE: Here we find the second, and last first day meeting recorded in the Bible. It, as the other, was a meeting of the disciples in their own upper room. The context of shows it to be a night meeting, and Paul, after preaching during the night, makes his trip across to Assos the light part of this same day, which would not be an act of sacredness, but rather one of secular work.

11. In the eighth and last time the first day is mentioned, what is said of it?

"Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come," I Corinthians 16:1, 2.

NOTE: This, the last time the first day is mentioned, stands on the same ground as does the other seven places, nothing said, to lead any one to believe that it is a sacred day of any kind, or that it should be kept holy by any one at any time. The people in this case were not commanded to meet together, but to lay by him (or himself) in store for the poor of Jerusalem.

12. Since Christ and the apostles did not keep the first day, then what day did they observe?

Paul -- "And he reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks," Acts 18:4.

13. How long did he continue at this place?

"And he continued there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them," Acts 18:11. Seventy-eight Sabbaths.

14. Was it Paul's custom so to do?

"And Paul as his manner was, went in unto them, and three Sabbath days reasoned with them out of the Scriptures," Acts 17:2.

15. What was Christ's attitude toward the Sabbath?

"And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up: and as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read," Luke 4:16.

16. Is it safe to follow Christ?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

### **New Testament Sabbath**

1. In what order does the Sabbath and the first day of the week stand in the New Testament?

"In the end of the Sabbath as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre," Matthew 28:1.

2. After the crucifixion, what day was kept by the women who followed Jesus?

"And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment," Luke 23:56.

3. "According to the commandment" what day is the Sabbath?

"But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God; in it thou shalt not do any work," Exodus 20:10.

4. Why is the seventh day the Sabbath?

"For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it," Exodus 20:11.

5. How did the holy women regard the first day of the week?

"Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them," Luke 24:1.

NOTE: In this reading we see the women brought the spices which they had prepared with which to embalm the body of Jesus, and this was on the first day of the week. In reading about the Sabbath day visit we find no spices were brought with which to embalm His body, and this alone should be proof that the holy women had respect for the Sabbath which God had blessed.

6. What was the custom of Christ in regard to the Sabbath?

"And He came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read," Luke 4:16.

7. In predicting the overthrow of Jerusalem, and the necessity of fleeing from Judea prior to that time, what did he enjoin upon His disciples regarding the Sabbath?

"But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day," Matthew 24:20.

NOTE: The destruction of Jerusalem was accomplished by the Romans in the year 70 A.D. Therefore, the Sabbath was binding in that age by the commandment of Christ Himself.

8. On what day did the Jews meet in the synagogues for worship?

"For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day," Acts 15:21.

9. To whom was Paul especially commissioned to preach?

"But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way; for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear My name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel," Acts 9:15.

10. On what day did he and Barnabas go into the synagogue at Antioch?

"But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the Sabbath and sat down," Acts 13:14.

11. After the sermon had been preached by Paul, and the Jews had left the synagogue, what did the Gentiles request of the apostles?

"And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath," verse 42.

12. What was the result of this request?

"And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God," verse 44.

13. On what day did the women at Philippi hold their prayer-meetings?

"And on the Sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont [or accustomed] to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted thither," Acts 16:13.

14. What was Paul's manner regarding the Sabbath?

"They came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews: and Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three Sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures," Acts 17:1, 2.

15. While at Corinth how did the apostle Paul spend the Sabbath?

"After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth . . . and he reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks [or Gentiles]," Acts 18:1-4.

16. How long did he continue at this work in this place?

"And he continued there a year and six months, teaching the word of God among them," verse 11.

17. Are we admonished to be followers of the apostle Paul as he was of Christ?

"Be ye followers of Me, even as I also am of Christ," I Corinthians 11:1.

18. Will we be in darkness if we follow Christ?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world; he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

19. On what day does Paul say God rested from His works?

"For He spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all His works," Hebrews 4:4.

20. Does this same Sabbath rest remain for the people of God?

"There remaineth therefore a rest [margin, keeping of a Sabbath] to the people of God," Hebrews 4:9.

21. Should we be followers of god?

"Be ye therefore followers of God as dear children," Ephesians 5:1.

22. Should we cease from our works as God did from His?

"For he that is entered into His rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from His. Let us labor therefore, to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief," Hebrews 4:10, 11.

### **Time of Crucifixion**

1. When the wicked people came into the place near Jerusalem which is called Golgotha, what did they do with Jesus?

"And they crucified Him, and parted His garments, casting lots," Matthew 27:35.

2. Between what hours of the day was Christ hanging on the stake, before He died?

"Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour," Matthew 27:45.

3. What time of the day did Christ die?

"And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice . . . Jesus when He had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost," verses 46, 50.

4. At what time of day was the ninth hour?

The ninth hour was at 3 o'clock in the afternoon. See note at end of this section.

5. What was the next event of importance at this time?

"And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent," verse 51.



6. What happened later in the day?

"When the even was come, there came a rich man from Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple. He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered," verses 57, 58.

7. What did Joseph do with the body?

"And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed," verses 59, 60.

8. What is the Biblical law regarding crucifixions?

"And if a man have committed a sin worthy of death, and he be to be put to death, and thou hang him on a tree: his body shall not remain all night upon the tree, but thou shalt in any wise bury him that day," Deuteronomy 21:22, 23.

NOTE: See the word "Day" in the concordance of your Bibles, and it will be learned that from sundown to sundown was the civil day, or the whole day of twenty-four hours, as we have it now.

Then the day was divided into the dark part, and the light part. The dark portion was divided into watches, viz. first, second, third and fourth. And the day was divided into hours, viz. third, sixth, ninth and twelfth. The third was from six o'clock in the morning until nine in the morning, or the first three hours of the light part of the day; sixth hour was until 12 o'clock noon; ninth hour was from twelve until 3 o'clock in the afternoon (this was the time the Bible says Christ died), and the twelfth hour was from three until 6 o'clock in the evening.

### **The Master's Sign**

1. There were many people in the world when Jesus was here who did not believe Him to be the Son of God, as He claimed. What did some of these men require of Christ, that they might believe in Him?

"Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from Thee," Matthew 12:38.

2. What was Christ's answer?

"But He answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas," verse 39.

3. What was the sign of the prophet Jonah, which Christ said would be the only sign that would be given that He was the Messiah?

"For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth," verse 40.

4. Did Jesus fulfil this sign which He gave the world that He was the Christ?

NOTE: If the old theory was true, which came to us from the Catholic Church, that Good Friday was the crucifixion day of Christ and Easter Sunday the resurrection day, Christ did not fulfill the only sign He gave the world that He was the Christ. There are not three days and three nights between Friday and Sunday. This fact can be clearly

seen by a very small amount of mathematical calculation.

The facts in the case are, however, that the crucifixion and resurrection, according to the Scriptures did not occur upon these two days. The world, in this enlightened age, is rapidly accepting this new light.

### **The Resurrection of Christ**

1. After Christ was resurrected, when were visits made to the tomb?

"And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint Him. And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun," Mark 16:1, 2.

2. Of what one thing in particular were they talking among themselves, as they went to the sepulcher?

"And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?" verse 3.

3. What did they discover when they arrived at the tomb?

"And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great," verse 4.

4. Did they find the body of Jesus, or had He left the tomb some time before this?

"He is risen; He is not here: behold the place where they laid Him," verse 6.

5. As the above verse says, Christ was gone from the tomb early the first day of the week. What does the other witness, Luke, say?

"Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre . . . And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus," Luke 24:1-3.

6. The evidence according to both Mark and Luke, is that Christ was gone when these visits were made. What does John testify on this subject?

"The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene . . . and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. Then she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them. They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid Him," John 20:1-2.

7. As these three gospels, Mark, Luke and John, all agree that when the visitors came to the tomb early the first day of the week, the stone at the door of the sepulcher was already rolled away. Christ was then resurrected and gone. What evidence have we as to the time when this stone was rolled away, and when Christ was really resurrected?

"In the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre. And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightening, and his raiment white as snow; and for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. He is not here: for He is risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay," Matthew 28:1-6.

8. The earthquake occurred, the angels descended, and the stone was rolled away

in the end of the Sabbath. The events of Christ's resurrection occurred at this time. Christ Himself tells us, in Matthew 12:40, that the only sign He would give the world that He was the Messiah, was that He would be in the earth three days and three nights. Upon what day of the week would the crucifixion and burial have taken place?

NOTE: Three days and three nights before the end of the Sabbath (which is the day before the first day of the week, and therefore Saturday) count backwards from Saturday night three days and three nights. This takes us to Wednesday.

9. When did the prophet Daniel say Christ would be crucified, or cut off?

"And He shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week He shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease," Daniel 9:27.

NOTE: While the week here has a prophetic meaning, and application with the seventy weeks, it also has a literal significance, and to this prophecy is given a two-fold meaning, as is the case with the seven heads of the beast in Revelation 17:9, 10.

#### Evidence From Astronomy

The next day after the full moon was always the Passover. It was the 14th day of the Jewish month Nisan. "It was coincident with the Passover," Smith's Bible Dictionary, Leviticus 23:5.

This year, A.D. 31, it fell on Wednesday. On this day Christ was crucified and laid in the tomb. "It was the preparation of the passover," or "high day" festival sabbath, John 19:14, 31, which came on the 15th of Nisan, Leviticus 23:6, 7.

Jesus was alive and the tomb empty "In the end of the Sabbath," Matthew 28:1-7. "Late on the Sabbath," Revised version, He was in the tomb "Three days and three nights," Matthew 12:40.

Count back three days and three nights from "Late on the Sabbath" and we have Wednesday evening the time of his burial. Thus God's great time-piece, the Heavens, Genesis 1:14; Psalm 19:1, speaking through the unerring science of Astronomy, confirms the Bible record of the time of the death and resurrection of Jesus.

10. Isn't it a fact according to John 19:31, that Christ was crucified the day before a Sabbath? The text reads:

"The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day (for that sabbath day was an high day), besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away," John 19:31.

11. Was this the weekly Sabbath, or the Passover Sabbath, which was called the high day Sabbath?

"For that sabbath day was a high day," verse 31.

"And it was the preparation of the passover," verse 14.

12. How did the Passover Sabbath originate?

"In the fourteenth day of the first month at even is the Lord's Passover. And on the fifteenth day of the same month is the feast of unleavened bread unto the Lord," Leviticus

23:5, 6.

13. How long was this feast of unleavened bread to continue?

"Seven days ye must eat unleavened bread," verse 6 last part of verse.

14. What is said of the first day of this feast, which was the fifteenth day of this month?

"In the first day [first day of the feast], ye shall have an holy convocation: ye shall do no servile work therein," verse 7.

NOTE: This fifteenth day of the month is kept as a Sabbath. The day before was the passover, when the lamb without blemish was slain and offered as a sacrifice for the sins of the people, Exodus 12:3-6. This lamb was a true type of Christ who is so often mentioned as the lamb of God. Christ was also crucified on the passover, which was the fourteenth day of this month, the same day the lamb had for hundreds of years been slain. The day after Christ's crucifixion, therefore, would be the passover Sabbath, or the high day Sabbath.

### The Lord's Supper

1. Who spoke to Moses and Aaron while they were in the land of Egypt?

"And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron in the land of Egypt, saying," Exodus 12:1.

2. What was said to them at this time?

"This month shall be unto you the beginning of months: it shall be the first month of the year to you," verse 2.

3. What were they commanded to tell the children of Israel?

"Speak you unto all the congregation of Israel, saying, In the tenth day of this [the first] month they shall take to them every man a lamb, according to the house of their fathers, a lamb for an house," verse 3.

4. Was this lamb to be a perfect one?

"Your lamb shall be without blemish, a male of the first year: ye shall take it out from the sheep, or from the goats," verse 5.

5. How long was this lamb to be kept up?

"And ye shall keep it up until the fourteenth day of the same month," verse 6.

6. What were they to do with this lamb?

"And the whole assembly of the congregation of Israel shall kill it in the evening," verse 6.

7. What were they to do with the blood of this lamb?

"And they shall take of the blood, and strike it on the two side posts and on the upper doorpost of the houses, wherein they shall eat it," verse 7.

8. Would there be any one destroyed in the homes where the blood of this lamb was found?

"And the blood shall be to you for a token upon the houses where ye are: and when I see the blood, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you to destroy you, when I smite the land of Egypt," verse 13.

9. What were they to do with the flesh of this lamb?

"And they shall eat the flesh in that night, roast with fire, and unleavened bread; and with bitter herbs they shall eat it," verse 8.

10. For how long a time would this day be kept as an ordinance?

"And this day shall be unto you for a memorial; and ye shall keep it a feast to the Lord throughout your generations; ye shall keep it a feast by an ordinance for ever," verse 14.

11. What is this same day called in the New Testament?

"And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!" John 19:14.

12. What happened to Christ during the light part of this same day?

"But they cried out, Away with Him, away with Him, crucify Him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar. Then delivered he Him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led Him away . . . where they crucified Him, and two others with Him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst," John 19:15-18.

13. What did Christ institute on this same day, but prior to His arrest?

"And He took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is My body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of Me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood, which is shed for you," Luke 22:19, 20. See also Matthew 26:26-29; Mark 14:22-25.

14. In connection with the bread and fruit of the vine, what did He introduce?

"He riseth from supper, and laid aside His garments; and took a towel, and girded Himself. After that He poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded," John 13:4, 5.

15. Must we follow this example?

"If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet," verse 14.

16. What did He say He had given us?

"For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you," verse 15.

17. During what part of the day did these things occur, the light or the dark part?

"He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night," verse 30.

18. During what part of the twenty-four hour period does Paul say these things occurred?

"For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread: and when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat, this is My body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of Me. After the same manner also He took the cup, when He had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of Me," I Corinthians 11:23-25.

19. By following these instructions what do we show?

"For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come," verse 26.

NOTE: It would be impossible to celebrate Independence Day on the 25th of December. Why? For the simple reason that July 4th was the day on which the Declaration of Independence was passed and signed, and is the only day upon which it can be successfully celebrated. This day, the fourth of July, points us back to the time when we, in reality, won our freedom. The same is true with the fourteenth day of the first month (Bible time). Upon this day a real sacrifice was made for sin; in observing the Passover upon this day, we show the Lord's death till He comes again.

20. Of what will one be guilty when they partake of these emblems unworthily?

"Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord," verse 27.

21. What is really necessary before partaking of these emblems?

"But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup," verse 28.

22. What will one bring to himself by eating and drinking unworthily?

"For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body," verse 29.

NOTE: According to the Bible, the year commences with the new moon after the Vernal Equinox in the spring. Then fourteen days later than this is the time for the Passover, which should be taken during the first part of the night of the fourteenth day.

## Lesson 6

### The Intermediate State

1. By what figure does the Bible represent death?

"But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him," I Thessalonians 4:13, 14.

NOTE: When one is sound asleep, he is wholly lost to consciousness; time goes on unmeasured, and the functions of the mental organs are suspended for the time being.

2. Where do the dead sleep?

"And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake," Daniel 12:2.

3. How long will they continue to sleep in the dust of the ground?

"So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep," Job 14:12.

4. What does Job say he will wait for?

"If a man die, shall he live again? All the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come," verse 14.

5. Where will he wait for this change?

"If I wait, the grave is mine house: I have made my bed in the darkness," Job 17:13.

6. While in this condition, what does one know of those he has left behind?

"His sons come to honour, and he knoweth it not; and they are brought low, but he perceiveth it not of them," Job 14:21.

7. In what condition are the thoughts of the dead?

"His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish," Psalm 146:4.

8. Do the dead know anything?

"For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten," Ecclesiastes 9:5.

9. Do they have any love, hatred, or envy?

"Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion forever in any thing that is done under the sun," Ecclesiastes 9:6.

10. Are the dead able to praise the Lord?

"The dead praise not the Lord, neither any that go down into silence," Psalm 115:17.

11. Is there any remembrance of God while in the hands of the enemy death?

"For in death there is no remembrance of Thee: in the grave who shall give Thee thanks?" Psalm 6:5.

12. Did David ascend into the heavens?

"For David is not ascended into the heavens " Acts 2:34.

13. With what one thing will David be satisfied?

"As for me, I will behold Thy face in righteousness: I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with Thy likeness," Psalm 17:15.

14. If the dead will never be raised, what would be the result?

"For if the dead rise not, then is Christ not raised: and if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished," I Corinthians 15:16-18.

15. Is there a promise of a resurrection of the dead?

"Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast out the dead," Isaiah 26:19.

"In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed," I Corinthians 15:52.

16. When does the resurrection of the righteous take place?

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first," I Thessalonians 4:16.

The leaflets in autumn may wither and fade,  
The forest be naked and bare --  
The friends of our youth in the grave may be laid,  
And we may be laid with them there;

But the winter will pass, and the spring will return  
And the forest again will be green,  
And the faithful who sleep in death's mouldering urn  
Will arise and in glory be seen.

### **Immortality of Man**

1. What do we understand by the words immortal and immortality?

Not dying; deathless.

2. How many times is the word immortal found in the Bible?

One time.

3. To whom is it applied?

"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen." I Timothy 1:17.

4. How many times does the word immortality occur?

Five times.

5. How may we gain immortality?

"To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life," Romans 2:7.

6. What part of man will put on immortality?

"For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality," I Corinthians 15:53.



7. What will be said when mortality will have put on immortality?

"So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory," I Corinthians 15:54.

8. At the present time, who only hath immortality?

"Which in His times He shall shew, Who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen," I Timothy 6:15, 16.

9. How was immortality brought to light?

"But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, Who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel," II Timothy 1:10.

10. What does the word mortal mean?

Subject to death. Webster.

11. To whom is this word applied?

"O Lord, Thou art our God; let not man prevail against Thee," II Chronicles 14:11.

12. What is man declared to be?

"Shall mortal man be more just than God?" Job 4:17.

13. How does the apostle Paul speak of this same subject?

"Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof," Romans 6:12.

"But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you," Romans 8:11.

"For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh," II Corinthians 4:11.

NOTE: Man, a mortal being, cannot become immortal except through a resurrection of the righteous, at the second coming of Christ.

14. What will take place at the first resurrection?

"In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality," I Corinthians 15:52, 53.

15. What can be truthfully said at the resurrection, that cannot be said now?

"Death is swallowed up in victory," I Corinthians 15:54.

16. What else happens at this same time?

"O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?" verse 55.

17. How may this victory be won?

"But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ," verse 57.

## Are Men Judged at Death?

1. How far back in this world's history do we find the judgment spoken of?

"Then shall the trees of the wood sing out at the presence of the Lord, because He cometh to judge the earth," I Chronicles 16:33.

2. Is there a time to judge the righteous and the wicked?

"I said in mine heart, God shall judge the righteous and the wicked: for there is a time there for every purpose and for every work," Ecclesiastes 3:17.

3. Has God appointed a day in which to judge the world?

"Because He [God] hath appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness," Acts 17:31.

4. Was the judgment yet future in Paul's day, A. D. 60?

"And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come," Acts 24:25.

5. Since the judgment was future in Paul's day, at what time will it be?

"I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, Who shall judge the quick (living) and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom," II Timothy 4:1.

NOTE: This is a plain statement, testifying to the fact, that the judgment takes place at Christ's second coming, and not at death, as is commonly taught by modern teachers. As all know, that Christ's second coming is in the future, so all should know that the judgment is also future. Another fact is, that, "the living know that they shall die, but the dead know not any thing," Ecclesiastes 9:5. So it would be impossible for them to have been judged at death and come on down to this time, not knowing anything about it.

6. Was the revelator given a glimpse of the coming judgment?

"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books," Revelation 20:12.

7. At this time, how complete will the resurrection be?

"And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell [margin, the grave] delivered up the dead which were in them," Revelation 20:13.

8. After the sea and the grave give up their dead, then what takes place?

"And they were judged every man according to their works," Revelation 20:13

9. How old is the doctrine of Christ's coming, and the judgment?

"And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all," Jude 14, 15.

10. Who must appear in the judgment?

"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that everyone may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad," II Corinthians 5:10.

11. How does the Apostle Peter speak of the judgment?

"The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished," II Peter 2:9.

12. What condition will be in the world at the judgment day?

"And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged," Revelation 11:18.

13. When will the separation of righteous and wicked take place?

"When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory: and before Him shall be gathered all nations: And He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats," Matthew 25:31, 32.

14. In this judgment, what work will be brought up?

"For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil," Ecclesiastes 12:14.

### **What Will Become of the Wicked?**

1. How long will the punishment of the wicked last?

"And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal," Matthew 25:46.

2. What is the punishment of the wicked declared to be?

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

3. In what way does James speak of the same thing?

"Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished bringeth forth death," James 1:15.

4. What is said of the soul that sinneth?

"Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die," Ezekiel 18:4. See also verse 20.

5. What of the man that turneth away from righteousness?

"When a righteousness man turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them; for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die," Ezekiel 18:26

6. To what are the wicked compared?

"But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way," Matthew 13:25.

7. What will finally be done with the tares?

"Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn," Matthew 13:30.

8. In what way will the wicked be destroyed?

"For while they be folden together as thorns, and while they are drunken as drunkards, they shall be devoured as stubble fully dry," Nahum 1:10.

NOTE: Those of us who at the present, or some time in our lives have lived on the farm, know what it is to burn off the stubble field, or the bunches of weeds or trash that accumulates. We know that after the fire has been kindled, it only takes a very short time until the stubble or trash is in ashes.

9. What day does the prophet Malachi say is coming?

"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven," Malachi 4:1.

10. In that day what will the proud, and also the wicked be?

"And all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble," Malachi 4:1.

11. And what will become of them?

"And the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch," Malachi 4:1.

12. After they have been burned, then what will they be?

"And ye [the righteous, see verse 2] shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of Hosts," Malachi 4:3.

13. Since the wages of sin to be death, where will the wicked receive their reward?

"Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner," Proverbs 11:31.

14. How does this harmonize with the Revelation?

"And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them," Revelation 20:9.

15. What is this death declared to be?

"And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death," Revelation 20:14.

16. In what way does Isaiah speak of the punishment of the wicked?

"And the destruction of the transgressors and of the sinners shall be together, and they that forsake the Lord shall be consumed," Isaiah 1:28. See also 66:17.

17. What does the Psalmist say of the transgressors?

"But the transgressors shall be destroyed together: the end of the wicked shall be cut off," Psalm 37:38. See also verses 9, 10, 20, 34.

Our purpose in life is usefulness,  
And is not confined to us alone;  
Through our faith and love and truthfulness,  
God will grant us a heavenly home.

We all should live in helping others  
Redeem the time, and forsaking sin,  
Thereby truly love one another,  
Through the Holy Ghost their hearts to win.

Our words, our deeds, whether good or bad,  
Are all recorded in heaven above;  
Have your sins blotted out, thus be glad  
You're saved thru Christ's redeeming love.

The judgment day is coming to all,  
Are you now just what you ought to be?  
If not, flee to Christ, on Him now call,

If eternal life you wish to see.

Are you right with God, in all you do?

You must answer this question some day;

These solemn words now appeal to you,

When you meet Jesus what will you say? -- I.S. Sherwin

### **Will the Majority be Saved or Lost?**

1. Upon one occasion, what question was asked Christ?

"Then said one unto Him, Lord, are there few that be saved?" Luke 13:23.

2. What answer did Christ give to this question?

"And He said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able," verses 23, 24.

3. Which road leads to the eternal city, the narrow or the broad one?

"Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life," Matthew 7:14.

4. Will the majority be traveling this narrow way?

"Few there be that find it," verse 14.

5. To where does the broad road lead, and will there be a great number traveling it?

"Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there at," verse 13.

6. How does Christ speak of the days of Noah in connection with His coming?

"But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," Matthew 24:37.

7. What conditions existed in the days of Noah?

"And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually," Genesis 6:5.

8. Seeing the condition as it was, what did God purpose to do?

"And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth Me that I have made them," Genesis 6:7.

9. How many people were landed safely over the flood?

"And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the flood," Genesis 7:7.

NOTE: This made a total of eight that were saved over the flood. Although Noah was a preacher of righteousness for one hundred and twenty years, he was unable to make the people see the coming destruction, which would take them all away unless they would turn to God. Christ likens His second coming to the days of Noah, and believing His words to be true, we cannot expect the majority to turn from their wicked ways.

10. How many were saved out of the wicked cities of Sodom and Gomorrah?

"And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take

thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city," Genesis 19:15.

NOTE: This time, there were only four started safely on their way to the place of safety.

11. After these people had left the city, and because of Lot's wife looking behind her, what did she become?

"But his wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt," verse 26.

12. Does not Christ admonish us to remember Lot's wife?

"Remember Lot's wife," Luke 17:32.

13. Since we have found that only a very few people were saved upon these two occasions, and these things were written for our admonition, what promise does Christ make to the few?

"Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom," Luke 12:32.

14. For what reason has the promise been made to the few?

"Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations," Deuteronomy 7:9.

15. What does Christ say concerning the same thing?

"Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in heaven," Matthew 7:21.

16. Will there be many pleading for admittance into the kingdom?

"Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy name? and in Thy name have cast out demons? and in Thy name done many wonderful works?" verse 22.

17. How will they be answered?

"And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity," verse 23.

Almost I hear the shout of God,  
His bugle soon to sound;  
Almost I see the disrupt sod  
Show opened graves around.

Almost I feel the quickening thrill,  
Which shouting saints attend;  
When that instant change of likeness will \_  
Give rapture without end.

Almost the sinner's grief I see  
O'er hopes forever past  
I hear their doom, "Depart from me."

Their wail and woe at last.

### **What is the Soul, and Is it Immortal?**

1. From what was man made in the beginning?

"And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground," Genesis 2:7.

2. And by what act was he made alive?

"And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life," Genesis 2:7.

3. What did man become after the breath of life had been breathed into him?

"And man became a living soul," Genesis 2:7.

4. According to Paul, what was the first man Adam?

"And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul," I Corinthians 15:45.

NOTE: As Paul has said, "Adam was made a living soul," and we learn by Genesis 2nd chapter that it was the act of placing breath within him that made him, the man himself, a living soul. Not, a living soul placed within the man, but the man was the living soul.

5. By what act is man a dead soul?

"Thou hidest Thy face, they are troubled: Thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust," Psalm 104:29.

NOTE: By placing breath within man, he was made alive, and by removing that breath he returns to the dust from whence he came.

6. What part of Christ was made an offering for sin?

"Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief: When Thou shalt make His soul an offering for sin," Isaiah 53:10.

7. Was His soul poured out unto death?

"Therefore will I divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong; because He hath poured out His soul unto death," Isaiah 53:12.

NOTE: By these two verses we learn that even Christ's soul was poured out unto death, that it was made an offering for sin. We are aware of the fact that the Christ Himself was the offering made for sin, and was the one who cried out, "It is finished."

8. Is it possible for the soul to eat?

"And in the first day there shall be . . . an holy convocation to you; no manner of work shall be done in them, save that which every man [margin soul] must eat, that only may be done of you," Exodus 12:16. Also see Leviticus 7:18, 20, 25, 27.

9. Can it be possible for the soul to come in contact with anything by touching?

"Or if a soul touch any unclean thing, whether it be a carcase of an unclean beast, or a carcase of unclean cattle, or the carcase of unclean creeping things, and if it be hidden from him; he [the soul] also shall be unclean, and guilty," Leviticus 5:2.

10. Is the soul subject to death?

"Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is

Mine: the soul that sinneth it shall die," Ezekiel 18:4. See also verse 20.

11. Is it possible for man to kill souls that should not die?

"And will ye pollute Me among My people for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to My people that hear your lies?" Ezekiel 13:19.

12. How will man's souls be redeemed?

"But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for He shall receive me," Psalm 49:15.

13. According to the Bible where was Christ's soul placed?

"He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that His soul was not left in hell [grave], neither His flesh did see corruption," Acts 2:31.

14. Since we have found the soul to be the man, is he not mortal?

"Shall mortal man be more just than God? Shall a man be more pure than his Maker?" Job 4:17.

15. In what condition are we, according to Paul?

"Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof," Romans 6:12.

Mortal: "Subject to death," - Webster.

16. At the present time who only hath immortality?

"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory for ever," I Timothy 1:17.

"Who only hath immortality," I Timothy 6:16. Immortal: "Exemption from liability to die," - Webster.

17. How can man possess immortality?

"To them who by patient continuance in well-doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life," Romans 2:7.

18. When will those who continue in well-doing be given immortality?

"Behold, I shew you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality," I Corinthians 15:51-53.

## **The Spirit of Man**

1. At death what leaves man and returns to God?

"Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it," Ecclesiastes 12:7.

NOTE: The statement is made, "To God who gave it," and it is now our duty to find what God gave man in the beginning. If we are successful in finding this from the standpoint of the Bible, it will be very easy to locate what this spirit is, that returns to God.

2. From what was man composed in the beginning?

"And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground," Genesis 2:7.



3. After man had been composed from the dust of the ground, what did God place within him to bring life?

"And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul," verse 7.

NOTE: In this verse we have located what God gave man in the beginning. Since this is what God gave man in the beginning, and the only thing He did give him, it is very reasonable to conclude that this is what leaves man at death, and it is termed breath and spirit throughout the Bible.

4. Let us hear the Psalmist on this same thought.

"Thou hidest Thy face, they are troubled: Thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust," Psalm 104:29.

5. What thought does he express in another place?

"His breath goes forth, he returneth to his earth," Psalm 146:4.

6. Then, what becomes of the thoughts of man?

"In that very day his thoughts perish," same verse.

7. Does the beast have the same breath or spirit as man?

"For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; even one thing befalleth them: as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast: for all is vanity," Ecclesiastes 3:19.

8. After this spirit or breath leaves man, what do they know?

"For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten," Ecclesiastes 9:5.

9. What becomes of their love, hatred, and envy?

"Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun," Ecclesiastes 9:6.

10. What is said to be in the nostrils of both man and beast?

"All in whose nostrils was the breath of [Margin, spirit of] life, of all that was in the dry land died," Genesis 7:22.

11. How does Job express the same thought?

"All the while my breath is in me, and the spirit of God [Margin, the breath which God gave him] is in my nostrils," Job 27:3.

12. Without what does James say the body is dead?

"For as the body without the spirit [Margin, breath] is dead, so faith without works is dead also," James 2:26.

NOTE: By these readings we find breath and spirit to be used interchangeably, meaning one and the same thing, when used in connection with what God gave to man in the beginning. They are consistently used this way in both Old and New Testaments.

### **Man's Origin and Nature**

1. What shows the importance of this study?

"What is man, that Thou are mindful of him? and the son of man, that Thou

visitest him?" Psalm 8:4.

2. What is the origin of man?

"And the Lord God formed man," Genesis 2:7.

3. Of what was man composed?

"Of the dust of the ground," Genesis 2:7.

4. What was added to make him alive?

"And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul," Genesis 2:7.

5. Was man subject to death?

"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die," verse 17.

6. After man had disobeyed God by eating of the forbidden fruit, what sentence was passed upon him?

"In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return," Genesis 3:19.

7. What precautions did God take to prevent man from living forever in his disobedient condition?

"And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So He drove out the man; and He placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life," verses 22, 23, 24.

8. How many were affected by this death sentence?

"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned," Romans 5:12.

9. Since the death sentence has been pronounced upon all men, are they mortal or immortal?

"Shall mortal man be more just than God? shall a man be more pure than his Maker? Job 4:17.

"Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof," Romans 6:12.

10. At the present time, who only hath immortality?

"Who [God] only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen," I Timothy 6:16.

11. How may man gain immortality?

"To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life," Romans 2:7.

12. What will those gain who fail to continue in well doing?

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

NOTE: We have learned that man is mortal at the present time and subject to immortality at the last day, if he will be obedient to the teachings of the Bible, or as Paul

said, "by patient continuance in well doing." We have also learned that those who are disobedient to the teachings of the Bible will gain the reward of the sinner, death.

Put all the armor on,  
Like valiant soldiers stand;  
Let all your loins be girt with truth,  
Waiting our Lord's command.  
While Jesus is our Friend,  
And His rich grace supplies,  
We'll march like valiant soldiers on:  
We're sure to win the prize.  
The battle's almost o'er;  
The race is nearly run;  
Then with our glorious, conquering King  
We'll sit down on His throne.  
Then prepare for life, everlasting life! -- Charles Wesley

Then those who have suffered, toiled for His name,  
Though hated, rejected, unknown,  
No longer shall suffer the world's scorn and shame  
When Jesus returns for His own.

There's coming a wonderful, wonderful day,  
Its glory has never been known;  
When free from our burdens we're going away.  
As Jesus returns for His own.

### **The Resurrection of the Dead**

1. What is man's present relation to death, and why was it pronounced on him?

"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned," Romans 5:12.

2. As death has come upon man, what do the scriptures tell us of a set time of remembrance?

"O that Thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that Thou wouldest keep me secret, until Thy wrath be passed, that Thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me. If a man die, shall he live again? all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come. Thou shalt call and I will answer Thee," Job 14:13, 14, 15.

3. What important testimony does the witness Isaiah give of the resurrection?

"For, behold, the Lord cometh out of His place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity: The earth also shall disclose her blood, and shall no more cover her slain," Isaiah 26:21.

4. What promise is made of redemption from the grave?

"I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction," Hosea 13:14.

5. As death entered the world through one man, through Whom will life again come to him?

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive." I Corinthians 15:22.

6. Does this imply that everybody who has died in the past will be resurrected, both wicked and righteous?

"Marvel not at this; for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation," John 5:28, 29.

7. Will there be order in the resurrection of the dead and which class of people will be brought to life first, the righteous or wicked?

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming," I Corinthians 15:22, 23.

8. What great event do the scriptures declare will transpire in connection with the resurrection of the dead?

"The Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first," I Thessalonians 4:16.

9. What further evidence have we that the righteous dead will be resurrected before the wicked dead?

"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years," Revelation 20:6.

10. When will the wicked dead be resurrected?

"But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished," Revelation 20:5.

11. Before whom will the dead stand when they are resurrected, and by what records will they be judged?

"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works," Revelation 20:12.

NOTE: "The books were opened, and another book was opened which is the book of life." The books that are first opened when the dead are judged, spoken of here are evidently the Old Testament Scriptures, and the book of the New Testament. Then besides these books we have mentioned the book of life, and in it are the names written of all who will be saved.

12. How extensive and complete is the resurrection and does it take in all portions of the globe?

"And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works," Revelation 20:13.

13. What becomes of those in the resurrection whose names are not found written in the book of life?

"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire," Revelation 20:15.

14. What classes of people are especially mentioned that have their part in the lake of fire, and what becomes of them?

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death," Revelation 21:8.

### **Promises to the Fathers**

1. To whom were the promises made?

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made," Galatians 3:16.

2. What was the promise referred to here that was given to Abraham and his seed?

"And the Lord said unto Abram after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: for all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever," Genesis 13:14, 15.

3. Did God renew and repeat this promise to Abraham's son Isaac?

"Sojourn in this land, and I will be with thee, and will bless thee; for unto thee, and unto thy seed, I will give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father," Genesis 26:3.

4. Was this promise of a land inheritance renewed and declared to Isaac's son Jacob?

"I am the Lord God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed; And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south; and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed," Genesis 28:13, 14.

5. Under this promise how long were the fathers and their seed to possess the land?

"And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession," Genesis 17:8.

6. What were the exact boundary lines of the promise to Abram and his seed?

"In the same day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates," Genesis 15:18.

7. According to the New Testament were these promises fulfilled and realized by Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and their seed to possess the land?

"And he said, Men, brethren and fathers, hearken; the God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, and said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, wherein ye now

dwelt. And He gave him none inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that He would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child," Acts 7:2-5.

8. Did Abraham expect to receive the fulfillment of the promise during his natural lifetime, or did he look to the future?

"By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off," Hebrews 11:8, 9, 13.

9. For what reason did the apostle Paul stand in judgment before King Agrippa?

"And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers: unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews," Acts 26:6, 7.

10. What is said of the importance and nature of these promises?

"Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature," II Peter 1:4.

11. What does Paul say of the promises made to Abraham regarding their territorial dominion?

"For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith," Romans 4:13.

12. To whom does the statement "to thy seed," refer which is so often mentioned in the promise to Abraham?

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ," Galatians 3:16.

13. Do the benefits of this promised inheritance to Abraham extend only to his literal descendants, or will Gentiles of every race and nationality likewise share as heirs of this promised inheritance?

"For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise," Galatians 3:27, 28, 29.

### **The Saints' Inheritance**

1. With what planet or physical body is all our present life connected?

With this earth.

2. What position was man given when created?

"Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth," Genesis 1:28.

3. This being man's position, what did the Creator say of the earth?

"For thus sayeth the Lord that created the heavens; God Himself that formed the

earth and made it; He hath established it, He created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord; and there is none else," Isaiah 45:18.

4. Will the righteous ever be removed from the earth?

"The righteous shall never be removed: but the wicked shall not inhabit the earth," Proverbs 10:30.

5. Where shall the righteous receive their recompense?

"For yet a little while and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be. But the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace," Psalm 37:10, 11.

6. To whom is the earth given?

"The heaven, even the heavens are the Lord's; but the earth hath He given to the children of men," Psalm 115:16.

7. What promise did Christ make to the meek?

"Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth," Matthew 5:5.

8. How did the Savior teach us to pray?

"Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven," Matthew 6:10.

9. Are there any scriptures which state with whom the righteous will be in the future, and their office?

"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years," Revelation 20:6.

10. Where will the righteous be during this reign of one thousand years as kings and priests with Christ?

"And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made us unto our God kings and priests; and we shall reign on the earth," Revelation 5:9, 10.

11. Do we have any other scripture which represents the earth as the future home of God's people?

"And the kingdom and dominion and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High," Daniel 7:27.

12. Will this earth be redeemed from its present condition?

"Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of His glory," Ephesians 1:14.

13. Do we have a definite statement in regard to the future home of God's people?

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the

end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely,"  
Revelation 21:1-6.

14. What more is said about the scope of our inheritance?

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things [margin] and I will be his God, and he shall be my son," Revelation 21:7.

Only waiting now for Jesus  
`Mid the care and pain and strife  
Waiting for the blessed promise  
And the crown of endless life.  
Waiting, waiting, ever waiting,  
For the coming of our King;  
And our souls are filled with rapture,  
While His praises here we sing. -- Mary E. Welch



## Lesson 7

### The Glorious City

1. What is said of the glorious city?

"Glorious things are spoken of thee, O city of God. Selah," Psalm 87:3.

2. By whom was this city built?

"For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God," Hebrews 11:10.

3. To what city will the righteous come?

"But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels," Hebrews 12:22.

4. What promise is given the overcomers?

"Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of My God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My new name," Revelation 3:12.

5. How long will this city remain?

"As we have heard, so have we seen in the city of the Lord of hosts, in the city of our God: God will establish it forever. Selah," Psalm 48:8.

6. Will the holy city be supplied with water, and in what form?

"There is a river, the streams whereof shall make glad the city of God, the holy place of the tabernacles of the most High," Psalm 46:4.

7. What did the apostle John say of this city?

"And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband," Revelation 21:2.

8. Does the glorious city come to the earth while present conditions prevail, or after the earth has been made new?

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband," Revelation 21:1, 2.

9. What proclamation from heaven is given at this time?

"Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God," Revelation 21:3.

10. What is the size of this city?

"And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal," Revelation 21:15, 16.

11. Of what will this city be composed?

"And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass," verse 18.

12. How many foundations has the wall of this city, and what names are contained

therein?

"And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb," verse 14.

13. Of what are these foundations composed?

"And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst," verses 19, 20.

14. How many gates are in the walls of this city, and of what are they composed?

"And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl," verse 21.

15. With what very precious metal are the streets of the new Jerusalem paved?

"And the street of the city was pure gold' as it were transparent glass," verse 21.

16. What, or who will act as the temple of this wonderful city?

"And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it," verse 22.

17. By what will the city be lighted?

"And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof," verse 23.

18. Who will be allowed to walk in the light of the new Jerusalem?

"And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honor into it," verse 24.

19. Will the gates of this city be shut at all?

"And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there," verse 25.

20. Will there be any death or pain in this glorious place?

"And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away," verse 4.

21. What is necessary in order to enter that city?

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son," verse 7.

22. By what standard will our lives be measured to determine whether or not we are fit subjects for this city?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

### **New Jerusalem Comes When, Where**

1. When Christ comes to reign, where will His throne be located?

"The Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David: and He shall reign over the house of Jacob forever," Luke 1:32, 33.

2. Since David's throne was on Mount Zion in Jerusalem, then will not this be the exact location of Christ's throne?

"The Lord shall reign over them in Mount Zion from henceforth, even forever. And thou, O tower of the flock, the strong hold of the daughter of Zion, unto thee shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem," Micah 4:7, 8.

3. Since by reason of disobedience the temporal city of Jerusalem was not suffered to continue, then should we not look for one to come?

"For here we have no continuing city, but we seek one to come," Hebrews 13:14.

4. As old Jerusalem was called the mother city under the old covenant promises, then is not New Jerusalem the mother city under the new covenant promise?

"But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all," Galatians 4:26.

5. In the promise of eternal inheritance made to Abraham, Genesis 13:14, 15, was this holy city included?

"For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God," Hebrews 11:10.

(Note this is a real city with foundations.)

6. Have we any prophetic account of this city coming down to earth?

"And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men," Revelation 21:2, 3.

7. Have we any description of the shape and size of this holy city?

"And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal," Revelation 21:16.

NOTE: By counting eight furlongs to a mile, this makes the city measure 1500 miles in circumference or 375 miles square.

8. Is there a wall around this city, if so how many gates to enter the city through the wall?

"And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates," verse 12.

9. What is the material composition of this city, and of this wall?

"The building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass," verse 18.

10. Of what are the gates composed, and the streets which enter the city?

"And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was of pure gold, as it were transparent glass," verse 21.

11. What is this city to be lighted with?

"The city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof," verse 23.

12. Will those who are changed to immortality, I Corinthians 15:51, I Thessalonians 4:17, and made kings and priests, Revelation 5:10, be permitted to enter this holy city?

"And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honor into it," verse 24.

13. Will any except the righteous be permitted to enter this holy city?

"And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life," verse 27.

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

14. Will wickedness be on the earth after Christ begins His reign in the holy city?

"For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie," Revelation 22:15. "There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out," Luke 13:28. "The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies," Psalm 110:2. "The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity," Matthew 13:41. "For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet," I Corinthians 15:25.

15. Christ comes and concludes the Battle of Armageddon, Zechariah 14:1-4. Will this walled city be here then?

"And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates," Ezekiel 38:11.

NOTE: this chapter outlines Armageddon Battle, Christ comes, verse 20.

16. Will this walled city be here immediately after Christ comes?

"But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plow-shares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore. But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid," Micah 4:1-4.

NOTE: This condition never was nor will be until Christ comes.

17. What proof have we that the walled city, the New Jerusalem, will be called the mountain of the Lord?

"Thus saith the Lord; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts the holy mountain," Zechariah 8:3.

18. Will Satan be on earth at the end of the thousand years?

"And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison," Revelation 20:7.

19. When Satan is loosed what will he do and to whom will he go?

"And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea," Revelation 20:8.

NOTE: Do we not learn that the saints' dwelling place is in the holy city with Christ?

20. Will not the holy city still be on earth at the end of the Millennium?

"And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them," Revelation 20:9.

21. Since Christ must reign till all enemies are put under His feet, I Corinthians 15:25, then will not His throne endure the flames which destroy the wicked?

"But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever," Hebrews 1:8. "As we have heard, so we have seen in the city of the Lord of hosts, in the city of our God; God will establish it forever. Selah," Psalm 48:8.

## **Sobriety**

1. To what extent did the wise man test the pleasures of the world?

"Whatsoever mine eyes desired I kept not from them, I withheld not my heart from any joy," Ecclesiastes 2:10. "I said in mine heart, Go to now, I will prove thee with mirth, therefore enjoy pleasure," verse 1.

2. How much true enjoyment did such a course afford?

"Behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun," Ecclesiastes 2:11. "Even in laughter the heart is sorrowful; and the end of that mirth is heaviness," Proverbs 14:13.

3. To whom alone is such mirth enjoyable?

"Folly is joy to him that is destitute of wisdom," Proverbs 15:21.

4. What conclusion did the wise man reach?

"Then I saw that wisdom excelleth folly, as far as light excelleth darkness," Ecclesiastes 2:13.

5. Why is sobriety preferable to levity?

"Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better," Ecclesiastes 7:3.

"It is better to go to the house of mourning, than to go to the house of feasting: for that is the end of all men; and the living will lay it to his heart," verse 2.

6. Of what does the wise man bid the young to be mindful, even in the pursuit of pleasure?

"Rejoice, O young man, in thy youth; and let thy heart cheer thee in the days of thy youth, and walk in the ways of thine heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: but know thou, that for all these things God will bring thee into judgment," Ecclesiastes 11:9.

7. What injunction to sobriety does the apostle give in his epistle to Titus?

"That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience. The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not

false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; that they may teach the young women to be sober . . . . Young men likewise exhort to be soberminded," Titus 2:2-6.

8. What similar advice is given in the epistle to the Romans?

"Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying," Romans 13:13.

9. What testimony does the apostle Peter bear on this point?

"Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ," I Peter 1:13.

10. Why is vigilance necessary?

"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour," I Peter 5:8.

11. What other consideration should lead us to sobriety?

"But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer," I Peter 4:7.

## **Saving Faith**

1. Give the Bible definition of faith.

"Now faith is the substance [margin, ground or confidence] of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen," Hebrews 11:1.

2. What is necessary in order to render acceptable service to God?

"But without faith it is impossible to please Him; for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him," Hebrews 11:6.

3. How may one know that God exists?

"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth His handiwork," Psalm 19:1, see also Romans 1:19, 20.

4. How may one have faith in Him as a being who cares for mankind?

"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God," Romans 10:17.

5. Are the promises of God of any value to those who do not believe them?

"I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not," Jude 5; see also Hebrews 3:14.

6. After believing in God and repenting of his sins, in whom must one believe in order to be saved?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

7. When one believes on the Son of God, what evidence does he have that his sins are forgiven?

"He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made Him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of His son," I John 5:10.

8. What is the nature of this witness?

"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God," Romans 8:16.

9. When one has this witness, what does it do for him?

"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ," Romans 5:1.

10. Upon what conditions has God promised the forgiveness of sin?

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin . . . If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John 1:7, 9.

11. Does the Bible warrant one believing that he receives what he asks for, before he is conscious of possessing it?

"Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them," Mark 11:24.

12. How may one learn to develop patience in waiting on God?

"My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience," James 1:2, 3, see also I Peter 1:3-9.

13. When in affliction, what ought all to believe?

"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God," Romans 8:28.

14. What kind of faith is that which is unaccompanied with works?

"For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also," James 2:26.

15. If one knows that he is constantly disobeying God, can he have real living faith?

"Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God. And whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight," I John 3:21, 22.

16. How much may one hope to receive, who asks with a doubtful mind?

"But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord," James 1:6, 7.

17. What was the cause of Peter's sinking after he had started to meet the Saviour on the stormy sea?

"And immediately Jesus stretched forth His hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?" Matthew 14:31.

18. What may one constantly have, by growing into the fullness of faith?

"Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost," Romans 15:13.

### **Nature of God's Law**

1. How many lawgivers are there?

"There is one Lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy," James 4:12.

2. What is said of the stability of His character?

"For I am the Lord, I change not," Malachi 3:6.

3. What is the character of His works?

"The works of His hands are verity and judgment; all His commandments are sure. They stand fast for ever and ever, and are done in truth and uprightness," Psalm 111:7, 8.

4. What is the character of His law?

"For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin," Romans 7:14.

5. What is revealed in that law as necessary for the carnal man to know before he can be converted?

"And knowest His will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law," Romans 2:18.

6. Then, if there is a change in one's life, from the carnal to the spiritual, does the law act any part in that work?

"The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple," Psalm 19:7.

7. What did our Savior say to the young man who wanted salvation?

"And He said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? There is none good but One, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments," Matthew 19:17.

8. Was it the intention of Christ to abolish or change any part of God's law?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

9. What did the Savior say He came to do to the law?

"Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil," Matthew 5:17.

10. When used in prophecy, what does the word fulfill mean? -- To bring to pass.

"That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet," Matthew 4:14.

"Then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory," I Corinthians 15:54.

11. But what does the word mean when associated with an obligation? -- To perform, or act in accordance with.

"Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ," Galatians 6:2, see also Matthew 3:15; James 2:8, 9.

12. What did Christ say He came into the world to do?

"Wherefore, when He cometh into the world, He saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not . . . Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of Me,) to do Thy will, O God," Hebrews 10:5-7.

13. Who did the Savior say should be saved in the kingdom of heaven?

"Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in heaven," Matthew 7:21.

14. What did He say of those who should break one of God's least commandments?

"Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 5:19.

15. What did He say of those whose righteousness (right-doing) did not exceed



that of the scribes and Pharisees?

"For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven," verse 20.

16. How did they transgress the command of God?

"But He answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?" Matthew 15:3.

17. How had they done this?

"For God commanded, saying, Honor thy father and mother . . . But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, . . . and honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition," verses 4-6.

18. What kind of worship did He say theirs was?

"But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men," verse 9.

19. By what rule will men's actions be weighted in the judgment?

"For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law . . . when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel," Romans 2:12-16.

20. How many of those who are condemned will be proved guilty by the law?

"Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God," Romans 3:19.

21. By whom will the saved be blessed in the bestowal of the eternal reward?

"Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world," Matthew 25:34.

22. What blessing will God give to those who have kept His commandments?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

## **Gossiping**

1. What does the ninth commandment forbid?

"Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour," Exodus 20:16.

NOTE: The evident object of this commandment is to guard our conversation.

2. What promise is given to those who fulfill its requirements?

"To him that ordereth his conversation aright, will I show the salvation of God," Psalm 50:23.

3. How is such a man regarded?

"If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body," James 3:2.

4. To what double use is the tongue put?

"Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be," verse 10.

5. Can the tongue ever be brought where it will not need watching?

"For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind: but the tongue can no man tame; It is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison," verses 7, 8.

6. What is one's duty, under these circumstances?

"Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God," Romans 6:13.

7. Through whom may we find deliverance from this law of sin in our members?

"But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 7:23-25.

8. Of what are one's words the index?

"Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh," Matthew 12:34.

9. What will our words have to do with our standing in the judgment?

"For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned," verse 37.

10. What special sin is covered by the ninth commandment?

"Thou shalt not go up and down as a tale-bearer among thy people; neither shalt thou stand against the blood of thy neighbor: I am the Lord," Leviticus 19:16.

11. What are the words of a tale-bearer like?

"The words of a tale-bearer are as wounds," Proverbs 26:22.

12. What is their effect?

"He that covereth a transgression seeketh love; but he that repeateth a matter separateth very friends," Proverbs 17:9.

13. What would follow if each attended to his own affairs only?

"Where no wood is, there the fire goeth out: so where there is no tale-bearer, the strife ceaseth," Proverbs 26:20.

14. What is that word like which is fitly spoken?

"A word fitly spoken is like apples of gold in pictures of silver," Proverbs 25:11.

15. To whom are our words all known?

"For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether," Psalm 139:4.

16. In view of the shortness of time, what should our conversation be?

"Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God," II Peter 3:11, 12.

This Savior soon is coming  
To call us each one home.  
He'll gather us together and  
We will no more roam.

He'll gather Israel home once more,  
To the holy promised land,  
And there He'll reign on David's throne  
With a high and holy hand.

Yes, now we pray for Thy return,  
To call us each one home;  
Where we can be with Thee ever more  
Around the great white throne.

And then we'll sing redemption's song,  
'Twill ever be the same,  
We'll praise Him then through endless time,  
O glory to His name! -- L. O. Van Nostrand

### **The Bible Name for the Church**

1. Was there a church in existence while the children of Israel were in the wilderness?

"This is He, that was in the church in the wilderness . . ." Acts 7:38.

2. After Christ was born into the world, have we the promise of a church being in existence through the coming ages?

"And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this Rock [God the Father] I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it," Matthew 16:18.

3. Who is the head of this church?

"And He [Christ] is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things He might have the pre-eminence," Colossians 1:18.

4. Since Christ is the head of the church, then who is the head of Christ?

"But I would have you know that the head of every man is Christ . . . and the head of Christ is God," I Corinthians 11:3.

5. As God is the head of Christ, and Christ built His church upon God the great head, by what name is this church called?

"Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God," I Corinthians 10:32.

6. Is the Church of God in Christ Jesus?

"For ye, brethren, became followers of the Churches of God which in Judea are in Christ Jesus," I Thessalonians 2:14.

7. What church did Christ purchase with His own blood?

"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which He hath purchased with His own blood," Acts 20:28.

8. What is the Church of God declared to be?

"But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in

the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth," I Timothy 3:15.

9. What church was located at Corinth?

"Unto the Church of God, which is at Corinth," I Corinthians 1:2.

10. What are the members of this church called to be?

"Unto the Church of God . . . to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints," I Corinthians 1:2.

11. By what are the lives of the saints or members of the Church of God governed?

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus," Revelation 14:12.

12. By what name does Paul say the family of God, both in heaven and earth is called?

"For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named," Ephesians 3:14, 15.

13. Of what church was Paul a persecutor?

"For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God," I Corinthians 15:9. See also Galatians 1:13.

NOTE: At first we find the Apostle Paul was a persecutor of the Church of God, but after his conversion he became a member of the family he had, at one time tried to tear down. Even at the time of his conversion he was on a mission of persecution, but on the way he was stricken down. Being informed what to do he went forth from that place, no more to be a persecutor and opposer of Christ and His cause, but to become the greatest writer of the New Testament. May those who read these lines, if they oppose the name Church of God and the cause for which it stands, see the truth as did Paul of old, immediately turn from the way of disobedience, and be submissive to the will of God.

## **Cheerfulness**

1. What is said of the heavy-hearted, and the effect of cheering words upon such?

"Heaviness in the heart of man maketh it stoop: but a good word maketh it glad," Proverbs 12:25.

2. What is the influence of cheerfulness upon the sad and despondent?

"A merry heart doeth good like a medicine; but a broken spirit drieth the bones," Proverbs 17:22.

3. What did Job exclaim when well-meaning friends came to him in a time of sore trouble, with words of reproach?

"I have heard many such things: miserable comforters are ye all," Job 16:2.

4. What did he say would have been the case had their circumstances been reversed?

"I also could speak as ye do: if your soul were in my soul's stead, I could heap up words against you, and shake mine head at you. But I would strengthen you with my mouth, and the moving of my lips should assuage your grief," Job 16:4, 5.

5. Are not those who have suffered and been comforted of God, best able to comfort others?

"Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God," II Corinthians 1:3, 4.

6. What beautiful promise is written for the upright in heart?

"Light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart," Psalm 97:11.

7. What should be the language of the heart that has experienced help from God?

"Thou hast turned for me my mourning into dancing: thou hast put off my sackcloth, and girded me with gladness," Psalm 30:11.

8. What should be the spirit of our service toward God?

"Serve the Lord with gladness: come before His presence with singing," Psalm 100:2.

9. Mention a special cause for good cheer.

"Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee," Matthew 9:2, last part. "Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered," Romans 4:7.

10. For what does Isaiah say he will greatly rejoice?

"I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels," Isaiah 61:10.

11. Under what adverse circumstances may the Christian be joyful in God?

"Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven," Luke 6:22, 23.

12. What gracious words spoken by the Savior to His disciples, reach down through the ages to us?

"These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world," John 16:33.

13. What special cause for encouragement is given us by virtue of Christ's victory over the world?

"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne," Revelation 3:21.

14. How constant should the Christian's rejoicing be?

"Rejoice in the Lord always, and again I say, Rejoice," Philippians 4:4.



## Lesson 8

### The Ministration of Death

1. Of what does Paul speak in II Corinthians 3:7?

"But if the ministration of death," II Corinthians 3:7.

2. In what was the ministration of death written?

"Written and engraven in stones," II Corinthians 3:7.

3. Upon how many stones was this ministration of death written?

NOTE: There is nothing said about the number of stones used, but there must have been a number as the word "stones" is used.

4. What happened to the glory of this ministration?

"But if the ministration of death written and engraven in stones was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away," II Corinthians 3:7.

5. Upon how many stones were the ten commandments written?

"And He declared unto you His covenant, which He commanded you to perform, even ten commandments; and He wrote them upon two tables of stone," Deuteronomy 4:13.

NOTE: The Bible, when speaking about the tables of stone upon which the ten precepts were written, uses the word "two" to denote the number of stones used. But with the ministration of death, the number of stones is not mentioned. So the ministration of death and the ten commandments are different and distinct.

6. In the ten commandments, is there anything said about the penalty if violated?

Answer -- The reader may turn to Exodus Chapter 20, and read the ten commandments. Nothing will be found telling what the penalty will be if violated.

NOTE: Since the penalty for the violation of the ten commandments is not found within that law, it cannot be the ministration of death, hence we must look elsewhere to locate the death penalty.

7. What titles are given the ten commandments?

"Perfect, converting the soul," Psalm 19:7. "Life everlasting," John 12:50. "Holy, just and good," Romans 7:12. "Spiritual," verse 14.

Many titles could be given which are the opposite to death.

8. Where do we find the penalty for the violation of God's law?

"Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest Thou?" John 8:5.

9. Of what was this woman guilty?

"They say unto Him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery in the very act," John 8:4.

NOTE: The woman above referred to was guilty of violating the seventh of the ten commandments. This commandment does not say what the penalty is, but Moses said such should be put to death.

10. Did Moses write a law?

"And Moses wrote this law," Deuteronomy 31:9.

11. In what did Moses write this law?

"And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the words of this law in a book, until they were finished," Deuteronomy 31:24.

12. How did Moses speak concerning the person who broke the fifth commandment?

"For everyone that curseth his father or his mother shall be surely put to death," Leviticus 20:9.

13. What if one should violate the third commandment?

"And he that blasphemeth the name of the Lord, he shall surely be put to death," Leviticus 24:16.

14. Under how many witnesses would they be put to death?

"At the mouth of two witnesses, or three witnesses, shall he that is worthy of death be put to death: but at the mouth of one witness he shall not be put to death," Deuteronomy 17:6.

15. What were the children of Israel to do after they passed over Jordan?

"And it shall be on the day when ye shall pass over Jordan unto the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, that thou shalt set thee up great stones, and plaster them with plaster," Deuteronomy 27:2.

16. Were any tools to be lifted upon these stones?

"And there shalt thou build an altar unto the Lord thy God, an altar of stones: thou shalt not lift up any iron tool upon them," Deuteronomy 27:5.

NOTE: We will notice that the stones spoken of here were not hewn, but were used as they came from the earth, and nothing was said as to the number used.

The two tables on which the ten commandments were written were hewn. See Deuteronomy 10:1.

17. What was to be placed upon this altar of stones?

"And thou shalt write upon the stones all the words of this law very plainly," Deuteronomy 27:8.

18. Was the above commandment ever carried into effect?

"Then Joshua built an altar unto the Lord God of Israel in Mount Ebal . . . and he wrote there upon the stones a copy of the law of Moses, which he wrote in the presence of the children of Israel," Joshua 8:30, 32.

NOTE: By the above scriptures we learn that Moses wrote a law in a book, and in this book of the law we find the ministration of death. Later this same law was written upon the stones of the altar in Mount Ebal, and is the law to which Paul refers when he speaks of the ministration of death. Another reason why this law is called the ministration



of death, is because it demanded the death of the animal sacrifice as a remedy for the man who, through ignorance violated the commandments of God (the ten) see Leviticus 4th chapter, also Numbers 15:27-29. Verse 30 says that if one sins presumptuously, he must die.

19. Since the law of Moses with the death penalty is gone, when will the violators of God's law be punished?

"The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished," II Peter 2:9.

Affliction and sorrow and death shall be o'er;  
The saints shall unite to be parted no more;  
Their loud hallelujahs fill heaven's high dome;  
They dwell with the Saviour forever at home.

The days of our exile are passing away;  
The time is approaching when Jesus will say,  
Well done faithful servant, sit down on My throne  
And dwell in My presence forever at home.

May we then, dear brother, midst pleasure or woe,  
For that heavenly kingdom our hearts prepare;  
And very shortly we most surely shall know  
And feel the joy of what it is to be there. -- Selected

### Free Will Offerings

1. How does God regard the covetous man?

"For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the Lord abhorreth," Psalm 10:3.

2. What kind of men does God require to occupy responsible positions in His work?

"Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men, such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness; and place such over them, to be rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens," Exodus 18:21.

3. What warning does the Saviour give against covetousness?

"And He said unto them, Take heed and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth," Luke 12:15.

4. How did God regard the rich man who laid up his goods for his own ease?

"But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?" verse 20.

5. What does Christ say of those who do as did the man in the parable?

"So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God," verse 21.

6. How much can one carry out of the world?

"For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing

out," I Timothy 6:7.

7. Who gives man power to get wealth?

"But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth," Deuteronomy 8:18.

8. What is said concerning those who trust in their riches?

"He that trusteth in his riches shall fall," Proverbs 11:28.

9. What charge was Timothy required to give the rich?

"Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God," I Timothy 6:17.

10. What ought they to do with their means?

"That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate," verse 18.

11. What will they thus do for themselves?

"Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life," verse 19.

12. By giving of one's substance to the Lord's work, what does he thus do?

"Honor the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase," Proverbs 3:9.

13. How does the Lord look upon the spirit of giving to the cause?

"But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased," Hebrews 13:16.

14. Does the Lord keep in mind those who assist in his cause?

"For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labor of love, which ye have shewed toward His name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister," Hebrews 6:10.

15. If a person has but little of this world's good, is he not excused from giving?

"Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the Lord thy God which He hath given thee," Deuteronomy 16:17.

16. Then can it be the amount a man gives that is so acceptable to God?

"For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not," II Corinthians 8:12.

17. What does one provide for himself who gives freely to the cause of God?

"Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth," Luke 12:33.

18. If one's treasure has been transferred to heaven by giving to God's cause, where will his heart be?

"For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also," verse 34.

Ear hath not heard, nor hath eye ever seen

The joys of the Father's beloved.

Look up, little flock, who are built on the rock,

For the righteous shall not be removed.

Then rejoice in the hope of the promise, dear friends,

Every eye shall behold Him appear;  
From the ocean so deep, from the grave's silent sleep,  
Come forth when His voice they shall hear.

Then oh, let us work while 'tis still called today,  
In the vineyard of Jesus our Lord,  
And count nothing loss for the sake of the cross,  
And the truths of Jehovah's grand word.

### **Ministry Supported by Tithes**

1. In what especial way are we commanded to honor God?

"Honor the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thy increase," Proverbs 3:9.

2. What portion of one's income does the Lord term the first fruits?

"And all the tithe [tenth] of the land, whether of the seed of the land or of the fruit of the tree, it is the Lord's: it is holy unto the Lord," Leviticus 27:30.

3. And what is said of the tithe of the herd or flock?

"And concerning the tithe of the herd, or of the flock, even of whatsoever passeth under the rod, the tenth shall be holy unto the Lord," Leviticus 27:32.

4. Who owns all the cattle and fowls of the earth?

"For every beast of the forest is mine, and the cattle upon a thousand hills. I know all the fowls of the mountains: and the wild beasts of the field are Mine," Psalm 50:10, 11.

5. Also the gold and silver?

"The silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine, saith the Lord of hosts," Haggai 2:8.

6. In fact, to whom does the earth, and its fullness belong?

"The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein," Psalm 24:1.

7. What statement of Christ indicates that man is not owner, but only a keeper of God's goods?

"For the kingdom of heaven is as a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods," Matthew 25:14.

8. Who gives man power to get wealth?

"But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth," Deuteronomy 8:18.

NOTE: Since we find the world, and all that is therein belongs to God, and He being the one that gives man the power to get wealth, it would look reasonable that it is man's duty to return some part to the Lord. He has only asked for the very small amount of ten cents on the dollar, which we find is for the purpose of spreading the gospel in these last days.

9. For whose support, and for what work were the tithes devoted in Israel?

"And behold, I have given the children of Levi all the tenth in Israel for an inheritance, for their service which they serve, even the service of the tabernacle of the congregation," Numbers 18:21.

10. In what language does Paul approve of the same method of support for the gospel ministry?

"If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things? . . . Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel must live of the gospel," I Corinthians 9:11, 13, 14.

11. How early in earth's history do we read of tithe paying?

"And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the Most High God. . . . And blessed be the Most High God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he [Abram] gave him tithes of all," Genesis 14:18-20.

12. In what way does Paul refer to the same event?

"For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; to whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all," Hebrews 7:1, 2.

13. After what order was Christ made a high priest?

"Whither the forerunning is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest forever after the order of Melchizedek," Hebrews 6:20.

14. Did Christ approve of tithe paying?

"Ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone," Matthew 23:23.

15. Does not Paul teach that the Gentiles should pay tithes?

"It hath pleased them verily: and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their [Gentiles] duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things," Romans 15:27.

16. Of what is one guilty who withholds the tithes and offerings.

"Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed Me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In tithes and offerings," Malachi 3:8.

17. Concerning what does the Lord ask us to prove Him?

"Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it," Malachi 3:10.

### **Judgment of the Transgressor**

1. Regarding the wicked, what question does Peter ask?

"For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?" I Peter 4:17.

2. What does Paul say is the wages of sin?

"For the wages of sin is death," Romans 6:23; Ezekiel 18:4. (Die -- To cease to live; to expire; to de cease; to perish. -- Webster.)

3. What will be the character of this death?

"Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power," II Thessalonians 1:9; Acts 3:23; Matthew 10:28. (Destroy -- To kill; to slay; to ruin; to extirpate; to put an end to. -- Webster.)

4. What does the Savior say will befall those who do not repent?

"I tell you Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish," Luke 13:3; I Corinthians 1:18. (Perish -- To die; to lose life; to wither and decay; to be destroyed; to come to nothing; to be blotted from existence. -- Webster.)

5. In what condition does the apostle say they shall thus perish?

"But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption," II Peter 2:12.

6. To what are the wicked in their punishment compared?

"But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away," Psalm 37:20. (Consume -- To destroy by separating the parts of a thing by decomposition, as by fire, etc.; to bring to utter ruin; to exterminate. -- Webster.)

7. What will be the result of this punishment?

"As the whirlwind passeth, so is the wicked no more: but the righteous is an everlasting foundation," Proverbs 10:25.

8. Will any part of them be left?

"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch," Malachi 4:1.

9. What will then be their condition?

"For as ye have drunk upon my holy mountain, so shall all the heathen drink continually, yea, they shall drink, and they shall swallow down, and they shall be as though they had not been," Obadiah 16.

10. Where will the place of the wicked then be?

"For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be," Psalm 37:10.

11. The earth in its present condition is and has been the place of the wicked. Where will they receive their recompense, death, which is the wages of sin?

"Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner," Proverbs 11:31.

12. How is this accomplished?

"And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them," Revelation 20:9.

13. Do the wicked go directly to this punishment at death? If not, when do they receive it?

"The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished," II Peter 2:9; Job 21:29, 30.

14. The earth, the sinner's place, has been cursed with sin. To what is that reserved?

"But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store,

reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men," II Peter 3:7.

15. What will be the result of this fire on the earth?

"Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?" verse 12.

16. What does our Savior call the earth when in this condition?

"The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His Kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire," Matthew 13:41, 42.

17. After the burning of the earth, what is to come?

"Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness," II Peter 3:13.

18. But where will the righteous then be found?

"Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father," Matthew 13:43.

19. What promise of the Savior's will at that time be verified?

"Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth," Matthew 5:5.

20. What universal song will be sung?

"And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto Him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever," Revelation 5:13.

### **Punishment of the Wicked**

1. Will all the dead be restored to life?

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive," I Corinthians 15:22.

2. What does Christ say about this subject?

"Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation," John 5:28, 29.

3. Why will the wicked be restored to life?

"When a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them; for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die," Ezekiel 18:26.

NOTE: By the above statement, we learn that it is necessary for the wicked to have a resurrection in order that they be punished for their own sins which they have committed. The death by which the human is being overcome today is not for their sins, but was pronounced upon them because of the transgression of our foreparents in the garden of Eden. Hence it is necessary that they come from the grave to receive their just recompense of reward, which will be death.

4. Has God promised to punish the wicked?

"And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the

terrible," Isaiah 13:11.

"Though hand join in hand, the wicked shall not be unpunished: but the seed of the righteous shall be delivered," Proverbs 11:21.

5. How will the wicked be punished?

"For the wages of sin is death," Romans 6:23.

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

6. What example have we of the punishment of the wicked?

"Even as Sodom and Gomorrhah and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire," Jude 7.

NOTE: These people who are set forth for an example "suffered the vengeance of eternal fire." Not that the fires remain burning, but the result, consumption and death remain eternally. There are no fires now burning on the sites of these accursed cities, neither did the Lord remove these people from the earth to some place (no one knows of) called hell, to punish them. They received their punishment on the earth, and the punishment of the wicked will be on the earth as we will show later.

7. Were the above cities to be an example to those who live ungodly?

"And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrhah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly," II Peter 2:6.

8. How does Christ express the same thought?

"But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed," Luke 17:29, 30.

9. How did the smoke of these burning cities appear to Abraham?

"And Abraham gat up early in the morning to the place where he stood before the Lord: and he looked toward Sodom and Gomorrhah, and toward all the land of the plain, and beheld, and, lo, the smoke of the country went up as the smoke of a furnace," Genesis 19:27, 28.

10. What does the Psalmist say of the punishment of the wicked?

"Upon the wicked He shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup," Psalm 11:6.

11. Will there be any place for the wicked?

"For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be," Psalm 37:10.

12. When this prophecy is fulfilled, where and in what condition will the wicked be?

"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch . . . . And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts," Malachi 4:1, 3.

13. Where will the wicked be rewarded?

"Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner," Proverbs 11:31.

Ask for the guide-book, the Bible from heaven,  
For our salvation its pages were given.  
If for a truth you are seeking today,  
Ask for the guidebook, it teaches the way;  
Thousands are traveling in death's downward way.  
Few walk the path that is narrow today;  
One leads to darkness, the other to light;  
One is the wrong way, the other is right.

### **Christ the Great Teacher**

1. What report did the officers bring who were sent out by the chief priests and Pharisees to take Jesus?

"The officers answered, Never man spake like this man," John 7:46.

2. How did Christ teach the people?

"For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes," Matthew 7:29.

3. Why was Christ's teaching so impressive?

"And they were astonished at His doctrine; for His word was with power," Luke 4:32.

4. With what was He filled?

"And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness," Luke 4:1.

5. How freely was the Holy Spirit bestowed upon Him?

"For He Whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto Him," John 3:34.

6. How had Christ's teachings by parables been foretold?

"I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old," Psalm 78:2.

7. How was this fulfilled?

"All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake He not unto them," Matthew 13:34.

8. What question did Christ's wonderful teaching call forth?

"And when He was come into His own country, He taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?" Matthew 13:54.

9. According to the prophet what would be Christ's attitude toward the law of God?

"The Lord is well pleased for His Righteousness' sake; He will magnify the law, and make it honourable," Isaiah 42:21.

10. In the sermon on the mount, what did Christ say as to the lasting force of His Father's law?



"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:17, 18.

11. In what special way did Christ magnify the law of His Father?

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire," Matthew 5:21-22.

12. What lesson is Christ here setting before the people?

"Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God," verse 8.

NOTE: Here we find Christ teaching the people that the impure thoughts are a violation of His Father's law, and that one will be punished for entertaining these thoughts within his mind. For further information on this same thought see verses 27, 28 of this chapter.

13. By whose authority did Christ speak?

"For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak," John 12:49.

"He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent me," John 14:24.

14. How profitable are His Father's commandments?

"And I know that His commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto Me, so I speak," John 12:50.

15. How does the Psalmist express this same thought?

"Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward," Psalm 19:11.

16. In the Revelation of Christ how is this same thought carried out?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

17. What does John say of the great Teacher?

"In Him was life; and the life was the light of men," John 1:4.

18. In referring to His own life, what does Christ say?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

19. To what life did He refer?

"As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world," John 9:5.

There's but one book, one hope, one creed;  
There's but one way to meet the need;  
There's but one thought to give to men,  
And that is Christ, our diadem.

The Christ of hope, of peace, of love;

And make it like to heaven above;  
To give mankind the power divine,  
Who said to us, "The world is thine."

Go fill it full of mercy, love,  
And make it like to heaven above.  
That all may know there's but one way  
To live in Christ, with God to stay. -- Selected

## Reconciled to God

1. What is enmity to God?

"The carnal mind is enmity against God," Romans 8:7, first part.

2. Why is the carnal mind considered an enmity?

"For it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," last part of same verse.

3. Can one please God while he is carnally minded?

"So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God," verse 8.

4. What will those receive who remain in that state?

"For to be carnally minded is death, verse 6.

5. How may this condition be changed?

"We pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God," II Corinthians 5:20.

6. How was this reconciliation brought about in the case of the wicked Ninevites, when Jonah prophesied their destruction?

The King of Nineveh said, "Let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands." "And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that He had said that He would do unto them; and He did it not," Jonah 3:8, 10.

7. Are repentance, confession, and a new life, essential to reconciliation in the gospel age also?

"Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out," Acts 3:19.

"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," I John 1:9.

8. Is this work effected independently of the sinner's action?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

"For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life," Romans 5:10.

9. How is the carnal mind destroyed?

"Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin," Romans 6:6.

10. When the work on the part of the sinner has been thoroughly done, how complete will be the change in him?

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new," II Corinthians 5:17.

11. How may we know whether or not one has experienced this change?

"Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them," Matthew 7:20.

12. If one has a spiritual mind, what fruit will he bear?

"The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance," Galatians 5:22, 23.

13. What is the first result of justification?

"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ," Romans 5:1.

14. How complete is the justification of that person who becomes reconciled to God?

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin," I John 1:7.

15. When thus reconciled to God, how will the individual stand?

"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit," Romans 8:1.

## **Justification**

1. By what are men justified?

"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ," Romans 5:1.

2. Then how are the just to live?

"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in him," Hebrews 10:38.

3. Why did not Israel of old attain to the law of righteousness?

"Because they sought it not by faith," Romans 9:32.

4. When one told Christ of the disciples' failure to heal his afflicted son, what did He say of that generation?

"He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I suffer you? Bring him unto Me," Mark 9:19.

5. What did the Savior say to Thomas when He met him, because he did not believe the testimony of his brethren that had seen Christ alive after His crucifixion?

"Reach hither thy finger, and behold My hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into My side: and be not faithless, but believing," John 20:27.

6. In view of the great cloud of witnesses of faith presented by the apostle in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews, what does Paul exhort all to do?

"Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us," Hebrews 12:1.

7. Why were most of the children of Israel prohibited from entering the promised land?

"And to whom sware He that they should not enter into His rest, but to them that believed not? So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief," Hebrews 3:18,

19.

8. How was their belief regarded, and how did it affect God?

"But with whom was He grieved forty years? Was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness?" verse 17.

9. What lesson does the apostle exhort us to draw from the course of the Israelites?

"Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into His rest, any of you should seem to come short of it," Hebrews 4:1.

10. What should all labor to do?

"Let us labor therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief," verse 11.

11. Should one lose heart, even though he feels that God is chastising him?

"My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of Him," Hebrews 12:5.

12. Who are they that seem to have the greatest amount of affliction?

"For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth," verse 6.

13. If one has no chastisement to bear, how may he regard himself?

"But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons," verse 8.

14. When the disciples became almost discouraged at one of Christ's sayings, and asked, "Who then can be saved?" what answer did Christ make?

"But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible," Matthew 19:26.

15. When God made a promise to Abraham that seemed almost impossible to fulfill, how did the patriarch receive it?

"He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God," Romans 4:20.

16. For what was Abraham's faith under these circumstances counted?

"For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness," verse 3.

17. What should be the burden of one's prayer, who is troubled with unbelief?

"Lord, I believe; help Thou mine unbelief," Mark 9:24.

18. If one believes that he receives things for which he asks God, how will his faith be rewarded?

"Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them," Mark 11:24.

Rock of faith, oh, wondrous thing:

Let me always to thee cling;

In the dark and troubled hour,

Give to me thy wondrous power;

While life's billows surge and roll

O'er my weary, fainting soul,

Let my only refuge be,

Rock of faith, in thee, in thee.

Rock of faith, to stand for aye,  
Thou shalt guide me on my way,  
Till the home of God I'll see,  
Where the blest shall surely be.  
Thou alone of all are sure,  
Let me rest in thee secure,  
Till that better land I see,  
Rock of faith, through thee, through thee? -- Selected

### **Danger in Rejecting Light**

1. How does God regard sins of ignorance?

"And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent," Acts 17:30.

2. To whom is sin imputed?

"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin," James 4:17.

3. In what words did Christ teach the same truth?

"Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth." "If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak [margin, excuse] for their sin," John 9:41; 15:22. See John 3:19.

4. In view of this, what instruction does He give?

"Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: . . . While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light," John 12:35, 36.

5. Who courts the light?

"For every one that doeth evil hateth the light . . . . But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God," John 3:20, 21.

### **The Perpetuity of the Law**

1. Where must all men appear?

"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that everyone may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad," II Corinthians 5:10.

2. What will be the standard in the judgment?

"So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty," James 2:12; Romans 3:19.

3. In what condition are all men?

"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:23.

4. How many are included in the "all" who have sinned?

"What then? Are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved

both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin," verse 9.

5. By what are all men proved guilty?

"Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God," verse 19.

NOTE: It is what the law says, and not what one may interpret it to mean that proves the sinner guilty.

6. What effect does faith in Christ have upon the law?

"Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law," verse 31.

7. In what did the apostle Paul delight?

"For I delight in the law of God after the inward man," Romans 7:22.

8. How does the carnally minded man regard the law of God?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

9. How long did the Savior say all the law would be in force?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all [Greek, all things'] be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

NOTE: "As long as the world endures, not the least word, or letter, or point, or comma (so to speak), of the whole law, should by any means lose its authority, or fail of answering the end for which it was given. The moral law will, to the end of time, continue to be the standard of sin and holiness to all men, and the believer's rule of duty.

10. When asked which was the great commandment in the law, what answer did Christ make?

"Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself," Matthew 22:37-39.

11. What did He say hung on these two requirements?

"On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets," verse 40.

12. What does the apostle say about the practice of Christ keeping the law?

"And ye know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin," I John 3:5.

In the preceding verse, sin is said to be the transgression of the law. If in Him was no sin, He must have kept the law perfectly.

## Lesson 9

### Marriage Institution

1. What do the Scriptures teach concerning marriage?

"Marriage is honorable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge," Hebrews 13:4.

2. What advice does Paul give believers concerning marriage?

"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness?" II Corinthians 6:14.

3. When married are they not considered one flesh?

"For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh," Matthew 19:5, 6.

4. In the true marriage does not God approve of the union?

"What therefore God hath joined together, let no man put asunder," Matthew 19:6.

5. While one is truly married can he or she be joined to another without committing adultery?

"Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery," Luke 16:18.

6. Are there exceptions to this rule?

"The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord," I Corinthians 7:39.

"And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery," Matthew 19:9.

7. Does God unite, or approve of His children uniting with fornicators?

"Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. What? Know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? For two, saith He, shall be one flesh," I Corinthians 6:15, 16.

8. Then since God only sanctions true marriages, must we not conclude that many marriages are untrue?

"Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly," John 4:16-18.

9. If husband or wife become a Christian, should they be divorced from their unbelieving partners?

"If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him," I Corinthians 7:12, 13.

10. Then if one is a Christian and they are living together agreeably, Paul does not recommend separation; but that this believer's children may be considered legitimate, God sets apart this unbeliever to be husband or wife to this believer?

"For the unbelieving husband is sanctified [set apart] by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified [set apart] by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy," verse 14.

11. In case this unbeliever will not consent to so live amicably with this Christian; is he or she so bound to give up his or her religion to maintain peace at home?

"But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or sister is not under bondage in such cases," verse 15.

12. Should not this brother or sister put forth every just means to win this unbeliever to the cause of truth?

"But God hath called us to peace. For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? Or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?" verses 15, 16.

13. What instructions do we get here concerning those who are truly married, or whom God hath truly joined together?

"Let not the wife depart from her husband: but and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife," verses 10, 11.

"What therefore God hath joined together let not man put asunder," Matthew 19:6. "Except it be for fornication," verse 9.

### **Submission**

1. To whom do we owe unqualified submission?

"Submit yourselves therefore to God," James 4:7.

2. Why are we under obligation to submit to God?

"Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker . . . I have made the earth, and created man upon it . . . There is no God else beside me; a just God and a Savior; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else," Isaiah 45:11-22.

Lift up the tempted soul  
Now fallen in despair  
Direct his thoughts above,  
To God Who heareth prayer.  
His arm in mighty power  
Can bid the demon cower,  
And in temptation's hour  
Will an escape prepare.

3. What constitutes submission to God?

"Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ,"



II Corinthians 10:5.

4. What will be the condition of one who is thus submissive to God?

He will be "filled with the knowledge of His will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding," Colossians 1:9.

5. What is the will of God?

"For this is the will of God, even your sanctification," I Thessalonians 4:3.

"Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God," I Peter 4:1, 2.

6. What is fulfilled in us when we live not in the flesh?

"That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit," Romans 8:4.

7. Then what is the course of one who is submissive to God?

He walks after the Spirit, i.e., brings forth the "fruit of the Spirit," Galatians 5:22-24, or in other words, fulfills "the righteousness of the law," which constitutes the will of God, I Peter 4:2.

8. What should we bring into subjection to God?

"But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection," I Corinthians 9:27.

"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service," Romans 12:1.

"Bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ," II Corinthians 10:5

"Glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's," I Corinthians 6:20.

9. Which member of the body requires the greatest exertion, together with the grace of God, to bring into subjection?

"But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison."

"If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body," James 3:8, 2.

10. What is the prayer of one who is submissive to God?

"Thy will be done," Matthew 6:10.

11. How was submission exemplified in the life of Christ?

"He [Jesus] humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross," Philippians 2:8.

"He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth," Isaiah 53:7.

Read Matthew 27:26-50, which gives an account of the trial of Jesus before Pilate, and His crucifixion.

12. To what other authority must we be submissive?

"I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanus, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints,) that ye submit yourselves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboreth," I

Corinthians 16:15, 16.

"Obey them that have the rule over you," Hebrews 13:17.

13. Why is it well for us to be submissive to church authorities?

"For they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief," Hebrews 13:17.

14. What is said about submission to worldly powers and authorities?

"Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates," Titus 3:1.

15. Why are we required to do this?

"Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God; the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God," Romans 13:1, 2.

"Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake . . . for so is the will of God," I Peter 2:13-15.

16. Does Peter mean we should submit to the ordinances of men, even when these are contrary to the express command of God?

Let Peter himself answer. "We ought to obey God rather than men," Acts 5:29.

"Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye," Acts 4:19.

17. What example have we of obedience or submission to God rather than man?

The three worthies in the fiery furnace. Read the third chapter of Daniel.

18. Then what is really meant by being subject to worldly rulers and ordinances of men?

"Render therefore to all their dues; tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor," Romans 13:7.

"Honor all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king," I Peter 2:17.

19. How do we stand related to one another with regard to submission?

"Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility," I Peter 5:5.

20. What seems to be the reason for the requirement?

Submission cultivates humility, a Christian virtue of high value. It is the humble to whom God "giveth grace," and whom He will in due time exalt, verses 5, 6.

21. What should be the attitude of a wife toward her husband?

"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands," Colossians 3:18.

22. What is submission?

"To be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands," Titus 2:4, 5.

23. Does this submission permit domination on the part of the husband?

"Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them," Colossians 3:19.

"Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church," Ephesians 5:25.

24. How far should a wife submit to her husband?

"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord," Colossians 3:18.

25. In what should children be submissive to parents?

"Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord," Colossians 3:20.

26. What is said about the submission of servants to masters?

"Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eye-service, as men-pleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God," Colossians 3:22.

### **Trusting in Jesus**

1. What did an Old Testament prophet predict of Christ?

"And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and His rest shall be glorious," Isaiah 11:10.

2. How does the apostle render this prophecy?

"And again, Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, and He that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in Him shall the Gentiles trust," Romans 15:12.

3. What were the apostles, who first trusted in Christ, to become?

"That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ," Ephesians 1:12.

4. What did the Ephesians do upon hearing the message of truth?

"In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation," verse 13, first part.

5. What returns did they receive from their proposed trust?

"In whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise," last part of same verse.

6. To whom does the gospel become the power of God?

"For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek," Romans 1:16.

7. But suppose one halts in His faith or trust; how is he regarded by the Lord?

"Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in him," Hebrews 10:38.

8. By what does one gain the victory over the world?

"For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith," I John 5:4.

9. In the struggle with temptations, if one trusts in Jesus, how will he show it?

"These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world," John 16:33.

10. Is there not some other help in the work of overcoming besides a trust in Christ?

"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death," Revelation 12:11.

11. But besides receiving power to overcome our foes, are there not temporal benefits to be derived from trusting in Jesus?

"For she said within herself, If I may but touch His garment, I shall be whole. But Jesus turned Him about, and when he saw her, He said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy

faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour," Matthew 9:21, 22. See also Mark 10:52; Luke 17:19.

## Temperance

1. With what does the apostle class temperance?

"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law," Galatians 5:22, 23.

2. What does he say are the habits of one who is successful in competing with others?

"And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things," I Corinthians 9:25.

3. In running the Christian race, what did Paul say he did in order to be successful?

"But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway," verse 27.

4. What effect does intemperance have upon one?

"Who hath woe? who hath sorrow? who hath contentions? who hath babbling? who hath wounds without cause? who hath redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine; they that go to seek mixed wine," Proverbs 23:29, 30.

5. Why were kings prohibited the use of strong drink?

"It is not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink: lest they drink, and forget the law, and pervert the judgment of any of the afflicted," Proverbs 31:4, 5.

6. Why were priests of the old dispensation not allowed to use intoxicating drink?

"And the Lord spake unto Aaron, saying, Do not drink wine nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when ye go into the tabernacle of the congregation . . . that ye may put difference between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean," Leviticus 10:8-10.

7. Why did Daniel and his companions refuse to drink of the wine of the king of Babylon?

"But Daniel purposed in his heart that he would not defile himself with the portion of the king's meat, nor with the wine which he drank," Daniel 1:8.

8. After protesting against the use of the stimulants offered them, what did they request?

"Prove thy servants, I beseech thee, ten days; and let them give us pulse to eat, and water to drink," verse 12.

9. At the end of the ten days' test, how did these Hebrews appear?

"And at the end of ten days their countenances appeared fairer and fatter in flesh than all the children which did eat the portion of the king's meat," verse 15.

10. At the end of three years (the time appointed for them to learn the Chaldean tongue, verses 4, 5) how many in the realm were found equal in learning to these abstainers.

"Now at the end of the days . . . the king communed with them; and among them all was found none like Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah . . . And in all matters of wisdom and understanding, that the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in all his realm," verses 18-20.

11. Did not Paul recommend the use of wine on a special occasion?

"Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities," I Timothy 5:23.

NOTE: There are two kinds of wine spoken of in the Bible. One of these was the fresh juice of the grape, and was pressed from the fruit into the cup as it was needed to drink, Genesis 40:11. It is this kind that is said to cheer God and man (Judges 9:13), and is dried up when the vine is destroyed, Joel 1:10-12. The other kind was that which had stood until it fermented, and alcohol had formed from the decaying substance.

12. How is the first kind spoken of?

"Butter of kine, and milk of sheep, with fat of lambs, and rams of the breed of Bashan, and goats, with the fat of kidneys of wheat: and thou didst drink the pure blood of the grape," Deuteronomy. 32:14.

13. How is the second kind represented?

"Look not thou upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth his color in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At the last it biteth like a serpent, and stingeth like an adder," Proverbs 23:31, 32. When it moves upright, as in the process of fermentation, it may be seen moving from the bottom upward. The original word here used "aright" means something "upright."

14. With what other low debaucheries is drunkenness more or less associated?

"Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revelings and such like, Galatians 5:19-21.

15. Can a drunkard enter the kingdom of God unless he reforms?

"Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God," I Corinthians 6:10.

16. How, then, should a Christian regard one who persists in drunkenness?

"But I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard," I Corinthians 5:11.

## **The Kingdom of God**

1. Do the prophets give us any information as to the extent of the territory over which Christ reigns as King?

"Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth," Daniel 2:34, 35.

"And the Lord shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one Lord, and His name one," Zechariah 14:9.

2. Where do the saints reign?

"And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth," Revelation 5:9, 10.

3. Will the righteous ever be removed from the earth?

"The righteous shall never be removed: but the wicked shall not inhabit the earth," Proverbs 10:30.

4. What testimony have we in regard to the New Jerusalem?

"And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband," Revelation 21:2.

5. What statement is heard at this time?

"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God," verse 3.

6. After this time will there be any more curse?

"And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him," Revelation 22:3.

7. What word picture have we of conditions as they will exist when the world changes from a human to a divine government?

"The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall be removed like a cottage; and the transgression thereof shall be heavy upon it; and it shall fall and not rise again. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth. And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days they shall be visited. Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before His ancients gloriously," Isaiah 24:20-23.

8. How are the righteous described?

"He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the earth: for the Lord hath spoken it. And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation," Isaiah 25:8, 9.

9. Where does the prophet declare the home of the people of God will be?

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him," Daniel 7:27.

10. What are the two great gifts of the Bible?

"The kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High," Daniel 7:27.

"The gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

11. Why is this true?

It is the final result of the blessing promised to Abraham that, "in thy seed [Christ] shall all the nations of the earth be blessed," Genesis 26:4. See also Genesis 12:3.

12. Who are qualified to become subjects of God's kingdom?

"Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which He hath promised to them that love Him?" James 2:5.

13. What does Christ say regarding His subjects?

"Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world," Matthew 25:34.

God does not ask you to die for Him,  
But to live and to prepare to live!  
All of life to prepare for Life!  
To you He doth freely give!  
The one who is in constant dread,  
The one who is afraid to die;  
Is the one who is not prepared to live  
In the city of Gold so nigh!  
The one who doeth the Master's words,  
The one who sings of His love --  
Is the one who is not afraid of death  
For he's prepared to live with God!

### **The Law of Liberty**

1. By what law will mankind be judged?

"So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty," James 2:12.

2. To what law does James refer when speaking of the law of liberty?

"For He that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill," James 2:11.

3. Who is the one referred to that said, "Do not commit adultery?"

"These words the Lord spake unto all your assembly," Deuteronomy 5:22.

4. By what law did Christ say the human family would be judged?

"He that rejecteth Me, and receiveth not My words, hath One that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day," John 12:48.

5. Did Christ speak His own, or His Father's commandments?

"For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak," John 12:49.

NOTE: If the reader will turn to his Bible and read Deuteronomy 5:7-22 and Exodus 20:3-17, he will get the words spoken by God. This is the law to which James and Christ have reference in speaking of the law by which man will be judged.

6. Why is this law called a law of liberty?

"And I know that His commandment is life everlasting," John 12:50.

7. For perfection, how does the Psalmist speak?

"The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple," Psalm 19:7.

8. Must one repent and become converted in order to have their sins blotted out?

"Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord," Acts 3:19.

9. Is there a reward for those who keep God's law?

"Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward," Psalm 19:11.

10. How great is the reward here spoken of?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

11. Will one be blessed for keeping this law?

"But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed," James 1:25.

NOTE: By the titles above given to the law of God, we do not wonder at James calling it a law of liberty. A law that by obeying it, is perfect in converting the soul, bringing the individual to the foot of the cross. Certainly it deserves many titles of honor.

12. In speaking of the same law, what does Paul say?

"For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified," Romans 2:13.

### **The Law Magnified by Christ**

1. State the Lord's purpose concerning the law.

"The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; He [Christ] will magnify the law, and make it honorable," Isaiah 42:21. Magnify -- To increase the power or glory of; to exalt; to extol; to sound the praises of. -- Webster.

2. Why was it necessary to magnify the law?

"It is time for Thee, Lord, to work: for they have made void Thy law," Psalm 119:126.

3. How was the law "made void" when Christ was on the earth?

"And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition," Mark 7:9. See also Matthew 15:1-9.

4. What was Christ's attitude toward the law?

"Think not that I am coming to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill." Matthew 5:17. Fulfil -- To render full, to fulfil, i.e., to perform perfectly. -- Greenfield's Greek Lexicon. See also Webster. Christ, then, came to perform the law perfectly in all its parts, but not as the Jews interpreted it.

5. How did He then proceed to magnify the law before His hearers?

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment," Matthew 5:21, 22. See also I John 3:15.

6. What did He say of the seventh commandment?



"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart," verses 27, 28.

7. Can the carnal mind be subject to God and His law?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

8. What is it to be carnally minded?

"For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace," Romans 8:6.

9. Did Christ Himself keep the commandments?

"I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in His love," John 15:10, last part of the verse.

10. How long did He say the law would last?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

11. Why did Christ come to earth?

"For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit," Romans 8:3, 4. That is, "perform perfectly" the law of God, -- a work which no one can do of himself.

12. In order to accomplish this, what was it necessary for Christ to do?

"For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly," Romans 5:6.

13. But if the law could have been abolished, would not that have released men from condemnation?

"Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression," Romans 4:15.

The Son of God, the Prince of Peace,  
His righteous reign shall never cease,  
Wise men of the East beheld His star  
And followed its bright beams afar,  
To where the infant Savior slept  
And unseen angels vigil kept.  
To honor Him so long foretold,  
They offered frankincense and gold. -- L. O. Van Nostrand

## The Nature of Man

1. In his creation with whom is man compared?

"But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man that Thou art mindful of him? or the son of man that Thou visitest him? Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; Thou crownedst him with glory and honor, and didst set him over the works of Thy hands," Hebrews 2:6, 7.

2. What is the nature of angels?

"But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection," Luke 20:35, 36.

3. What difference is there between the two Adams?

"And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit," I Corinthians 15:45.

4. Which is first, spiritual or natural?

"Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual," verse 46.

5. When does man become a spiritual being?

"It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body," verse 44.

6. To what does the sowing refer?

"So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption," verse 42.

7. How is man's nature here defined?

"Shall mortal man be more just than God? shall a man be more pure than his Maker?" Job 4:17.

8. What is God's nature?

"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen," I Timothy 1:17.

9. Of what was man formed in the beginning?

"And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground," Genesis 2:7.

10. By what act was he (the man) made a living soul?

"And [God] breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul," Genesis 2:7.

NOTE: The living soul was not put into the man; but the breath of life which was put into man, made him -- the man, a living soul.

11. Are others besides man called "living souls" in the Bible?

"And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea," Revelation 16:3.

12. Do other creatures besides man have the breath of life?

"And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: all in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died," Genesis 7:21, 22.

13. Do they have the same breath as man?

"As the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preeminence above a beast; for all is vanity," Ecclesiastes 3:19.

14. What does Job call that which was breathed into man's nostrils?

"All the while my breath is in me, and the spirit of God is in my nostrils," Job 27:3.

15. Can the soul and spirit be separated?

"For the word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart," Hebrews 4:12.

16. How many times is the word "immortal" used in the Bible?

One time, I Timothy 1:17.

17. To whom is it applied?

"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God . . .," I Timothy 1:17.

"Who (God) only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen," I Timothy 6:16.

18. By whom was death abolished and immortality brought to light?

"But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, Who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel," II Timothy 1:10.

19. How may one obtain this immortality?

"To them who by patient continuance in well-doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life," Romans 2:7.

20. When will the faithful receive immortality?

"Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed," I Corinthians 15:51, 52.

21. What is then to be swallowed up?

"So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory," verse 54.

22. How is this, the greatest of all victories gained?

"But thanks be to God, Which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ," verse 57.

## **The Sons of God**

1. Who are the sons of God?

"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not," I John 3:1.

2. When are we the sons of God?

"Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is," I John 3:2.

3. How do we become the sons of God?

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God," Romans 8:14.

4. What should be our example?

"That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world," Philippians 2:15.

5. For what do the sons of God await?

"For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God," Romans 8:19.

6. What things will be manifested in the sons of God?

"But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God," II Corinthians 4:2.

7. What privilege is given the sons of God?

"Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God," Romans 8:21.

8. What are the sons of God awaiting?

"But ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body," Romans 8:23.

9. What truth connected with this do we sometimes find difficult to realize?

"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose," Romans 8:28.

10. What is said of the heirship of the children of God who are the sons of God?

"And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together," Romans 8:17.

NOTE: No language can express nor the mind of man fully comprehend, the honor and glory connected with the consummation of the Christian's hope. When the greatness of the reward is considered, the "sufferings of this present time are not to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us."

### **Unity of Believers**

1. What expression does Christ make concerning the oneness of Himself and His Father?

"I and My Father are one," John 10:30.

2. In what way are Christ and His Father one?

"For I came down from heaven, not to do Mine own will, but the will of Him that sent Me," John 6:38.

3. Do Christ and God agree concerning God's commandments?

"For I have not spoken of Myself, but the Father which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say and what I should speak," John 12:49. See also John 14:24.

4. In what way did Christ pray for His followers?

"And the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one," John 17:22.

5. Why did Christ desire this perfect unity of belief, and practice to be among His

followers?

"That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us; that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me," John 17:21.

6. By what did Christ say all men should know His disciples?

"By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another," John 13:35.

7. In what way did Paul speak concerning a oneness of God's people?

"Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment," I Corinthians 1:10.

8. In Paul's closing remarks to the church at Corinth, what admonition did he give?

"Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you," II Corinthians 13:11.

9. Since Paul speaks of God's people as having one mind, and living in peace with each other, what then does he call them?

"And hath put all things under His [Christ's] feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all," Ephesians 1:22, 23, also I Corinthians 12:27.

10. Being members of the church or body of Christ; of what else do we become members?

"So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another," Romans 12:5.

11. As members of each other what is the duty of each?

"That there should be no schism [margin, division] in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another," I Corinthians 12:25.

12. What should they endeavor to keep?

"I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called . . . endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace," Ephesians 4:1, 3.

13. As to unity, what will be the final condition of God's watchmen?

"Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice; with the voice together shall they sing: for they shall see eye to eye, when the Lord shall bring again Zion," Isaiah 52:8.

14. United, what will be the cry of God's people when Christ comes?

"And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation," Isaiah 25:9.



## Lesson 10

### Was Peter the Foundation Rock?

1. When Christ came into the coasts of Caesarea, what question did He ask?

"When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi; He asked His disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?" Matthew 16:13.

2. What answer did he receive?

"And they said, Some say that Thou art John the Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets," Matthew 16:14.

3. After finding the opinion of the multitude, then what question did He ask His disciples?

"He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?" Matthew 16:15.

4. What answer did Peter give?

"And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God," Matthew 16:16.

5. Through what source had Peter learned that Christ was the Son of God?

"And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father which is in heaven," Matthew 16:17.

NOTE: After making a study of these few verses, we find considerable difference of opinion among the people as to who Christ really was, some thinking He was one and some another. In fact only a few seemed to know the truth of the matter, and they had received their knowledge from the great fountain head, or foundation of all: namely, God the Father, the eternal Rock of all ages.

6. By different Bible writers what is God declared to be?

"He is the Rock, His work is perfect: for all His ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is He . . . But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked . . . then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation . . . Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee," Deuteronomy. 32:4, 15, 18.

"Unto thee will I cry, O Lord my Rock," Psalm 28:1.

"He [God] only is my Rock and my salvation; He is my defense; I shall not be greatly moved," Psalm 62:2, see verse 7.

The readers will please turn to their Bibles and read the following: Psalm 19:14, margin; 31:2, 3; 42:9; 61:2; 73:26, margin; 89:26.

NOTE: Many other scriptures could be given, as proof that God is declared to be the Rock, but I trust these few will be ample proof to those who read these lines.

7. After Peter had acknowledged Christ to be the Son of God, then what did Christ say to him?

"And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this Rock [God the

Father, the one which revealed to Peter that Christ was His Son] I will build My church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it," Matthew 16:18.

NOTE: If the readers will notice carefully they will find that Christ did not say He would build His church upon Himself, but upon someone else, whom He called "This Rock." By searching the Bible we find God is declared to be the Rock, or foundation of all, while Christ is only called the Chief Corner Stone of the building, which was to be built upon this Rock or foundation.

8. In Paul's writings what is Christ declared to be?

"And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the Chief Corner Stone," Ephesians 2:20.

9. How does Peter speak of the same thing?

"Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded," I Peter 2:6.

NOTE: By making a careful study of this subject; with all the connecting scriptures that could be given, we find that Christ made no promise of building His church upon Peter. Neither did He say, I will build this church upon Myself; but He said, "upon this Rock." As God is declared to be the Rock, and the church is called by His name, and He being the one which revealed to Peter that Christ was His Son, certainly it is logical to conclude that God was the One to Whom Christ referred when He said, "Upon this Rock I will build My church." And again, the statement has been made that, "God is head of Christ." Christ, knowing this, referred to the greatest of all beings as the foundation upon which to build the structure that would not only last through the present dispensation, but will stand throughout the ceaseless ages of eternity.

## **Pride**

1. How does the Lord regard pride?

"These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto Him: a proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, an heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, a false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren," Proverbs 6:16-19.

2. Why will the wicked not seek after God?

"The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts," Psalm 10:4.

3. What will one's pride do for him?

"A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit," Proverbs 29:23.

4. Is there a woe pronounced upon pride?

"Woe to the crown of pride, to the drunkards of Ephraim, whose glorious beauty is a fading flower, which are on the head of the fat valleys of them that are overcome with wine!" Isaiah 28:1.

5. Of what is pride a forerunner?



"Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall," Proverbs 16:18.

6. What is God's attitude toward the proud?

"But He giveth more grace. Wherefore He saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble," James 4:6. See Psalm 40:4; 101:5; 138:6.

7. Why should we not indulge in pride?

"An high look, and a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked, is sin," Proverbs 21:4.

8. How are the proud generally regarded?

"And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered," Malachi 3:15.

9. What is to be one of the sins of the last days?

"This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy," II Timothy 3:1, 2.

10. From where does the pride of life come?

"For all that is in the world the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world," I John 2:16.

11. What will become of all these worldly things?

"And the world passeth away, and the lusts thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever," verse 17.

12. What is to be the fate of the proud?

"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch," Malachi 4:1.

Dear sinner come to Christ today,  
Repent, give Him your heart and pray,  
And He will not turn you away,  
And will forsake you never.

He'll fill your soul with love and light,  
Forgive your sins, dispel your night,  
And you can walk with Him in white,  
Forever, Oh! Forever!  
Forever, Oh! Forever. -- Willis Logan

## Missionary Work

1. What has been given to every man?

"For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work," Mark 13:34.

2. Besides work, what else has been given to every man?

"And unto one He gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability," Matthew 25:15.

3. What are those called to whom this work is committed?

"For the kingdom of heaven is as a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods," verse 14.

4. What use did these servants make of their talents?

"Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents . . . But he that received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money," verses 16-18.

5. What excuse did the one who hid his talent make?

"I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine," verse 25.

6. What did his master say to him?

"His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant," verse 26.

7. What did he say the servant should have done?

"Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury," verse 27.

8. What is the excuse of slothful servants?

"The slothful man saith, There is a lion without, I shall be slain in the streets," Proverbs 22:13.

NOTE: They see great obstacles before them, and are always ready with excuses.

9. What is the reward of the slothful servant?

"And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth," Matthew 25:30.

10. What is said of the servant who exercised his talents?

"His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord," verse 21.

11. By what other name is a worker for Christ called?

"Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God," II Corinthians 5:20.

12. What does God do with the unfruitful members?

"Every branch in Me that beareth not fruit He taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit," John 15:2.

13. What promise is made to those who sow the gospel seed?

"They that sow in tears shall reap in joy. He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him," Psalm 126:5, 6.

14. What promise is made to soul-winners?

"He that winneth souls is wise," Proverbs 11:30. "And they that be wise [margin, teachers] shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars forever and ever," Daniel 12:3.

15. What is God's attitude toward the poor?

"He shall deliver the needy when he crieth: the poor also, and him that hath no

helper," Psalm 72:12.

16. For what purpose did Christ say God had anointed Him?

"He hath anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor," Luke 4:18.

17. When did He say we could minister to the poor?

"Whosoever ye will ye may do them good," Mark 14:7.

18. What did Paul say regarding our duty to the poor?

"I have showed you all things, how that so laboring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive," Acts 20:35.

19. What promises are made to those who consider the poor?

"Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the Lord will deliver him in time of trouble. The Lord will preserve him, and keep him alive; and he shall be blessed upon the earth: and Thou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies. The Lord will strengthen him upon the bed of languishing: Thou wilt make all his bed in his sickness," Psalm 41:1-3.

20. How does the Lord regard kindness shown to the poor?

"He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord; and that which he hath given will He pay him again," Proverbs 19:17. "For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labor of love, which ye have showed toward His name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister," Hebrews 6:10.

21. What fate awaits those who turn a deaf ear to the poor?

"Whoso stoppeth his ears at the cry of the poor, he also shall cry himself, but shall not be heard," Proverbs 21:13.

22. What has the Lord instructed us to do?

"Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow," Isaiah 1:17.

23. What is pure and undefiled religion declared to be?

"Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world," James 1:27.

24. What is promised those who do this work?

"Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am . . . . And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday: and the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not," Isaiah 58:9-11.

25. How did Job treat the poor?

"I was a father to the poor: and the cause which I knew not I searched out," Job 29:16.

26. What did Christ tell the rich young man to do?

"Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow Me," Matthew 19:21.

27. In ministering to the needy, whom are we really serving?

"Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have

done it unto Me," Matthew 25:40.

28. What is one good evidence of genuine repentance?

"Break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities by showing mercy to the poor," Daniel 4:27.

29. What is one evidence that one has a knowledge of God?

"He judged the cause of the poor and needy; then it was well with him: was not this to know Me? saith the Lord," Jeremiah 22:16.

30. What divine law of retroaction attends giving?

"Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again," Luke 6:38. See Psalm 18:25, 26; 109:17; Galatians 6:7.

### **A Dying Church**

"A church that is doing nothing for the public is on its way to the cemetery. All its members who are doing nothing are acting as pall-bearers. All who are so busy with their own affairs that they have not time to devote to the Lord's cause are making the mourning wreath. The brother who says nothing at all is driving the hearse. The ones who are constantly drawing back when advance moves are to be made are throwing flowers on the grave. The brother who is continually talking of the hard times in the church is preaching the funeral sermon, and singing the burial hymns. And thus lies the church buried, free from all cares, Brother, which of these acts are you performing?"

### **The Poor, Our Duty Toward Them**

1. How long will the church have poor people in its midst?

"For ye have the poor always with you," Matthew 26:11.

2. What ought one to do for the poor, and how often?

"For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good," Mark 14:7.

3. What promises are made to those who consider the poor?

"Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the Lord will deliver him in time of trouble. The Lord will preserve him, and keep him alive; and he shall be blessed upon the earth: and thou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies. The Lord will strengthen him upon the bed of languishing: thou wilt make all his bed in his sickness," Psalm 41:1-3.

4. When one gives to the poor, how does the Lord consider the act?

"He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord; and that which he hath given will He pay him again," Proverbs 19:17.

5. Will the Lord bear in mind His promise to repay these acts of kindness?

"For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labor of love, which ye have shewed toward His name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister," Hebrews 6:10.

6. How will the Lord regard one who turns a deaf ear to the pressing cry of the worthy poor?

"Whoso stoppeth his ears at the cry of the poor, he also shall cry himself, but shall not be heard," Proverbs 21:13.

7. Who are specially mentioned as those who should be cared for?

"Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow," Isaiah 1:17.

8. How is such work designated in the New Testament?

"Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world," James 1:27.

9. What kind of a fast would God have His people hold?

"Is not this the fast that I have chosen? . . . Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh?, Isaiah 58:6, 7.

10. What promise is for those who do this work?

"Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am," verse 9.

11. Will such have darkness and discouragements?

"And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday," verse 10.

12. And what may he be sure of?

"And the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not," verse 11.

13. In view of the promises to those who carry out these things, whose example ought all to follow?

"I was a father to the poor: and the cause which I knew not I searched out," Job 29:16.

14. What did the Savior enjoin upon the rich young man, that he might have treasure in heaven?

"Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow Me," Matthew 19:21.

15. What will the Savior say to those whom He calls to inherit the kingdom of glory?

"For I was an hungered, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took Me in: naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me," Matthew 25:35, 36.

16. When the righteous ask in surprise regarding the time of these good deeds, how will the Savior reply?

"And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me," verse 40.

17. Is it true, that if we neglect a poor saint, we thus neglect the Savior?

"Then shall He answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it

not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to Me," verse 45.

The last lovely morning,  
All blooming and fair,  
Is fast onward fleeting,  
And soon will appear.  
While the mighty, mighty, mighty trump,  
Sounds, Come, Come, away,  
O let us be ready,  
To hail that glad day. -- Selected

### The Parable of the Tares and Wheat

1. In what way did Christ speak to the multitude?  
"All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables," Matthew 13:34.
2. What is a parable?  
Comparison. Webster.
3. Did Christ speak to the multitudes without a parable?  
"But without a parable spake He not unto them: and when they were alone, He expounded all things to His disciples," Mark 4:34.
4. To what did Christ liken the kingdom of heaven?  
"Another parable put He forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field," Matthew 13:24.
5. Who is the man that sowed the good seed in his field?  
"He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of Man," Matthew 13:37.
6. What is this field in which the good seed were sown?  
"The field is the world," verse 38.
7. To what do the good seed refer?  
"The good seed are the children of the kingdom," verse 38.
8. After the good seed had been sown, and while men slept, what did the enemy do?  
"But while men slept, His enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way," verse 25.
9. When the wheat commenced to grow what appeared with it?  
"But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also," verse 26.
10. To what do the tares have reference?  
"But the tares are the children of the wicked one," verse 38.
11. And who is the enemy that sowed them?  
"The enemy that sowed them is the devil," verse 39.
12. What question did the servants ask concerning the tares?  
"The servants said unto Him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?"  
verse 28.
13. What answer did they receive?

"But He said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them," verse 29.

14. How long will they be allowed to grow together?

"Let both grow together until the harvest," verse 30.

15. What is the harvest here referred to?

"The harvest is the end of the world," verse 39.

16. At the time of harvest what will be said to the reapers?

"Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into My barn," verse 30.

17. Who will act as reapers?

"The reapers are the angels," verse 39.

18. What things will be gathered out of the kingdom?

"The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity," verse 41.

19. Where will they be put?

"And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth," verse 42.

20. Then what will become of the righteous?

"Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear let him hear," verse 43.

Wicked spirits gather round thee,  
Legions of those foes to God --  
Principalities most mighty --  
Walk unseen the earth abroad;  
They are gathering to the battle,  
Strengthened for the last deep strife;  
Christian, arm! Be watchful, ready,  
Struggle manfully for life.

### **Christ the Way of Life**

1. What does Christ declare Himself to be?

"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me," John 14:6.

2. In what condition are all men?

"But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe," Galatians 3:22.

3. What is the penalty for sin?

"For the wages of sin is death," Romans 6:23.

4. What is the gift of God?

"But the gift of God is eternal life," Romans 6:23.

5. Through whom does eternal life come?

"Through Jesus Christ our Lord," Romans 6:23.

6. How many may be made partakers of this wonderful gift?

"And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely," Revelation 22:17.

7. After we have truly accepted Christ then what do we have in our possession?

"He that hath the Son hath life," I John 5:12.

8. In what way are we in possession of eternal life at the present time?

"For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God," Colossians 3:3.

9. When will this life be revealed, or made known?

"When Christ, Who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory," Colossians 3:4.

10. What is said of those who have not the Son?

"He that hath not the Son of God hath not life," I John 5:12.

11. According to John, what is necessary for one to do in order to abide in Christ?

"He that saith he abideth in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked," I John 2:6.

12. In what way did Christ speak of His own life?

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness but shall have the light of life," John 8:12.

13. When one is following the instructions of Christ, whose life is made manifest?

"I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God," Galatians 2:20.

14. Before we are quickened with Christ in what condition are we said to be?

"Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ," Ephesians 2:5.

15. What is this change, or quickening said to be?

"For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel," I Corinthians 4:15.

16. What is declared to be the one purpose of Christ's death?

"Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, He also Himself likewise took part of the same; that through death He might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil," Hebrews 2:14.

17. How do we become children of God?

"For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus," Galatians 3:26.

18. In what way may we show that we have faith in Christ?

"Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works," James 2:18.

19. With whom are the children of God joint heirs?

"If children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ," Romans 8:17.

20. Through whom will Abraham, and his seed receive the promise of the future inheritance?

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ," Galatians 3:16.

21. Is there salvation in any other than Christ?

"Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven



given among men, whereby we must be saved," Acts 4:12.

We are living, we are dwelling,  
    In a grand and awful time;  
In an age on ages telling --  
    To be living is sublime.  
Hark! The waking up of nations  
    Gog and Magog to the fray;  
Hark! What soundeth? Is creation  
    Groaning for the latter day?  
Christian, rouse and arm for conflict,  
    Nerve thee for the battle field;  
Bear the helmet of salvation,  
    And the mighty gospel shield;  
Let the breastplate, peace, be on thee,  
    Take the Spirit's sword in hand;  
Boldly, fearlessly, go forth, then,  
    In Jehovah's strength to stand.

### **Israel, Present and Future**

1. What is the present condition of Israel?

"What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded," Romans 11:7.

2. What was the result of this blindness?

"I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy," verse 11.

3. What benefits do the Gentiles draw from this loss?

"Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fullness?" verse 12.

4. What figure is used to represent the Jewish people?

"The Lord called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit," Jeremiah 11:16.

5. What happened to this tree when the Jews rejected Christ?

"And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree," Romans 11:17.

6. Why were they broken off?

"Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear," verse 20.

7. What words of caution does Paul give the Gentile world?

"For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee," verse 21.

8. Are the Jews denied the gospel?

"And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graff them in again," verse 23.

9. For how long a time will the Jews continue in this blinded condition?

"For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in," verse 25.

10. What will be the result when this blindness is taken away?

"And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob," verse 26.

11. When the kingdom of God is established what provision is made for Israel?

"Then answered Peter and said unto Him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed Thee; what shall we have therefore? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed Me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of His glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel," Matthew 19:27, 28.

Long has the tree been barren,  
Lacking in leaf and fruit;  
With branches withered and sapless,  
Dried and dead from the root.

Weary and long was the winter  
And earth was stormy and drear;  
But now the tree grows tender,  
And we know that summer is near.

For lo! In the withered branches  
The sap begins to flow,  
The boughs grow soft and supple  
And the first green leaf-buds blow.

The tree of the Lord's own planting,  
True Branch of David's Root;  
Soon shall it bud and blossom  
And fill the world with fruit. -- In Jewish Era of October 1919

### **Praise and Thanksgiving**

1. For what were all things created?

"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power, for Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created," Revelation 4:11.

2. Does man in his natural condition carry out the design of God?

"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:23.

3. While in this state, what did the Lord do for us?

"But God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners,

Christ died for us," Romans 5:8.

4. Through what is man permitted to come to repentance?

"Or despisest thou the riches of His goodness and forbearance and long-suffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?" Romans 2:4.

5. What does Christ become to those who accept Him?

"To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory," Colossians 1:27.

6. When this grace is received, what will it cause one to do?

"By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God," Romans 5:2.

7. On what condition are we to remain members of Christ's household?

"But Christ as a Son over His own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end," Hebrews 3:6.

8. How often, and for how much, should we render thanks to God?

"Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ," Ephesians 5:20.

9. The "all things" of the last text, includes our trials and disappointments. Why should we give thanks for them?

"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God," Romans 8:28.

10. What did Paul and Silas do when put in prison for their faith?

"And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them," Acts 16:25.

11. How did the Lord show His pleasure at their course?

"And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed," verse 26.

12. After being imprisoned, and then beaten by order of the Jewish Sanhedrin, what did Peter and John do?

"And they departed from the presence of the counsel, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for His name," Acts 5:41.

13. When perplexities come, what should one do?

"Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted within me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise Him, Who is the health of my countenance, and my God," Psalm 42:11.

14. When properly offered, what does praise to God become?

"Whoso offereth praise glorifieth Me: and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I show the salvation of God," Psalm 50:23.

15. Should our praise to God be confined to our secret devotions?

"My praise shall be of thee in the great congregation: I will pay my vows before them that fear Him," Psalm 22:25.

16. Why ought we thus to praise God?

"My soul shall make her boast in the Lord: the humble shall hear thereof, and be glad," Psalm 34:2.

17. What does David exhort all to do?

"O magnify the Lord with me, and let us exalt His name together," verse 3.

18. What good example did He set which is worthy of imitation by us when with our brethren?

"Come and hear, all ye that fear God, and I will declare what He hath done for my soul," Psalm 66:16.

19. What became of those anciently, who were not thankful?

"Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened," Romans 1:21.

20. What signal deliverance was once wrought for God's people when they offered praise to Him?

"And when they began to sing and to praise, the Lord set ambushments against the children of Ammon, Moab, and Mount Seir, which were come against Judah; and they were smitten," II Chronicles 20:22.

21. How should one approach God in prayer?

"Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God," Philippians 4:6. See also Colossians 4:2.

22. What is the will of God in this matter concerning us?

"In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you," I Thessalonians 5:18.

23. What has our Savior taught us to pray?

"Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven," Matthew 6:10.

### **The Christian's Armor**

1. Preceding the second coming of Christ what power makes war on the church?

"And the dragon was wroth with the woman, [true church] and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ," Revelation 12:17.

2. What great reward is promised to the overcomer?

"To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life," Revelation 2:7.

3. Where is this tree of life located?

"In the midst of the paradise of God," same verse.

4. Through whom are we able to conquer the world and its ways?

"Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us," Romans 8:37.

5. What is the character of the Christian's weapons of warfare?

"For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds," II Corinthians 10:4.

6. What are such weapons as these able to conquer?

"Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; and having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled," verses 5, 6.

7. What are we to put on?

"Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might. Put on the whole armor of God that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil," Ephesians 6:10, 11.

8. With what kind of foes do we have to contend?

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places," verse 12.

9. What are the first things with which one should be girded?

"Wherefore take unto you the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness," verses 13 and 14.

10. What is this truth with which one's loins should be girded?

"Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth," John 17:17.

"Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and Thy law is the truth," Psalm 119:142.

11. What does having loins girded mean?

"Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ," I Peter 1:13.

12. What is the righteousness of which the breastplate is composed?

"My tongue shall speak of Thy word: for all Thy commandments are righteousness," Psalm 119:172.

"And this is His name whereby He shall be called, The Lord Our Righteousness," Jeremiah 23:6.

"The Lord is well pleased for His Righteousness sake; He will magnify the law, and make it honourable," Isaiah 42:21.

13. With what are the feet to be shod?

"And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace," Ephesians 6:15.

14. Which piece of armor is mentioned as necessary to the soldier of God?

"Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked," Ephesians 6:16.

15. What kind of a helmet are we to wear?

"And take the helmet of salvation," verse 17.

16. With what sword is the Christian soldier to fight?

"The sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God," verse 17.

17. In order that we use the above weapons successfully, what is necessary?

"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints," verse 18.

18. How constantly does Paul admonish one to pray?

"Pray without ceasing," I Thessalonians 5:17.

19. If one stands this way, will they seek to save their lives?

"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death," Revelation 12:11.

20. Will Christ's soldiers be victorious under Him?

"And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the

victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God," Revelation 15:2.

## Lesson 11

### Evidence of Acceptance With God

1. In what way will God manifest Himself toward those who love Him?

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My words; and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him," John 14:23.

2. What relation is thus brought about between God and the one who loves Him?

"I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people . . . and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty," II Corinthians 6:16-18.

3. Can such relation exist, and one not know it?

"Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you," John 14:17.

#### First Evidence

4. What does the Lord give to every one who follows Him?

"Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid," verse 27.

5. He says, "Not as the world giveth." What does the world have to give those who have the Lord's peace?

"These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world," John 16:33.

#### Second Evidence

6. How will a truly converted man feel toward the law?

"For I delight in the law of God after the inward man," Romans 7:22.

7. What will the Lord do for him for thus regarding the law?

"But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in His law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper," Psalm 1:2, 3.

#### Third Evidence

8. What principle will control the true child of God?

"And He answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord Thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbor as thyself," Luke 10:27.

9. What is the relation of love and law?

"Love worketh no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law,"  
Romans 13:10.

10. What assurance is given to those who love one another?

"If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and His love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us, because He hath given us of His Spirit," I John 4:12, 13.

#### Fourth Evidence

11. How will God prove every one He loves?

"As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent,"  
Revelation 3:19.

12. How will such experience seem?

"Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby," Hebrews 12:11.

13. Why does the Lord chasten His children?

"For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness," verse 10.

#### Fifth Evidence

14. What will be the experience of those who open the door of their hearts and let Jesus in?

"If any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me," Revelation 3:20.

15. What were the feelings of the two disciples who talked with Jesus on the way to Emmaus?

"And they said one to another, Did not our hearts burn within us, while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the Scriptures?," Luke 24:32.

Lord, may thy glorious kingdom come,  
Thy righteous will on earth be done  
When peace shall reign from shore to shore,  
And nations shall learn war no more.

When Christ shall come to earth again  
And God Himself shall dwell with man,  
One people and one God will be  
Throughout a vast eternity

Yes, death itself will then be o'er,  
Sickness and sorrow be no more,  
When we shall reach that peaceful shore  
And be forever blessed. -- Lavina Leach



## Preaching the Gospel

1. Before leaving His disciples, what commission did Christ give them?

"And He said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature," Mark 16:15.

2. What reward did He say would be given those who believed the gospel?

"He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned," verse 16.

3. What is the gospel of Christ?

"For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek," Romans 1:16.

4. How extensively and for how long a time should the gospel of the kingdom be preached?

"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come," Matthew 24:14.

5. For what reason was the gospel to be preached to the Gentiles?

"Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for His name," Acts 15:14.

6. What description is given of those who preach the gospel?

"And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!" Romans 10:15.

7. What was the object of Christ's ministry?

"I the Lord have called Thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house," Isaiah 42:6, 7.

8. For what purpose was the apostle Paul chosen, and sent to the Gentiles?

"But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee . . . To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me," Acts 26:16, 18.

9. What are the ministers of God commanded to preach?

"Preach the word," II Timothy 4:2.

10. Why are they to preach thy word?

"All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness," II Timothy 3:16.

11. How are they to preach this word?

"He that hath My word, let him speak My word faithfully," Jeremiah 23:28.

12. What rule for teaching doctrine is laid down in the Bible?

"For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little," Isaiah 28:10.

13. What disposition should the servant of God always manifest?

"And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth," II Timothy 2:24, 25.

14. What promise is made to the faithful gospel minister?

"He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him," Psalms 126:6.

Now take the glad message to land and to the sea,  
For Jesus is calling, O what is your plea?  
Can you say, Yes, Lord, let Thy will be?  
Here am I, Savior, why not send me?

God's judgments and wrath are nearing their fate,  
And the nations must know it before it's too late;  
So then take the pathway the third angel trod,  
And teach them to worship the only true God.

Tell them the end of this age is at hand,  
For Israel's now gathering back to their land.  
Tell them of Jesus, and of His great fame,  
And soon He'll return to Jerusalem again.

There He will reign the Lord of the earth,  
Causing to cease all these nations' mad rush;  
On the throne prepared for the ages to come,  
There He'll reign as Lord, His name will be one. -- E. F. Thorp

### **The Two Husbands**

1. In what striking language does the Apostle Paul commence the seventh chapter of Romans?

"Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?" Romans 7:1.

2. After saying the law hath dominion over a man so long as he lives, then what of the woman and her husband?

"For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband," Romans 7:2.

3. For how long a time is she bound to this husband?

"So long as he liveth," same verse.

4. But what if this husband be dead?

"But if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband," same verse.

5. If while this husband is alive she should attempt to marry another man what

would she be called?

"So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress," Romans 7:3.

6. What if her husband be dead?

"But if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man," same verse.

NOTE: The first three verses of this chapter introduce four figures, namely, "the law, the woman, and the first and second husband." He uses these natural things to represent things that are spiritual. The woman represents the individual, the first husband the carnal nature, while the second husband or new man represents Christ. The law spoken of is the ten commandment law, which if we disobey, binds us to the old man, and holds us guilty as a sinner in the sight of God. On the other hand, if the individual is obedient to the law of God, he or she stands in a position to become married to the new man which is Christ. But if the individual, while a transgressor of God's law, seeks to be married to Christ the new man, he or she is guilty of spiritual adultery, just the same as a woman having one real husband is guilty of adultery if she marries another man.

7. In Ephesians, who does Paul say to put off?

"That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man," Ephesians 4:22.

8. In what condition is the old man?

"Which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts," same verse.

9. Is the carnal mind in accordance with God and His law?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

10. Is it possible to please God while living in the lusts of the flesh?

"So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God," Romans 8:8.

11. For whom is the ten commandment law made?

"Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine," I Timothy 1:9, 10.

NOTE: By the above statement it is plain who the law is for, and so long as one stands in this condition he or she is married to the old man, which is displeasing in the sight of God. But when our daily life is in accordance with the law of God, then we can come under the blood of Christ, be married to Him, and not be guilty of spiritual adultery.

12. When the old man is put away to whom can we be joined?

"But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof," Romans 13:14.

13. By what act do we put on Christ?

"For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ," Galatians 3:27.

14. After whom is this new man created?

"And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness," Ephesians 4:24.

15. In what condition must our thoughts be when the new man is put on?

"Blessed are the pure of heart: for they shall see God," Matthew 5:8.

16. Then what should be our disposition?

"But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy," James 3:17. See also Colossians 3:8-17.

17. When one is living obedient to God's word, and has put on Christ is he a new creature?

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new," II Corinthians 5:17.

## The Love of God

1. What does the apostle ask all to do?

"Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God," I John 3:1.

There are then, different manners of love. Man has one kind, which esteems others as long as they favor him, and no longer. God's is of another kind. When man turned away from God to serve his greatest enemy, the Lord did not desert him. He gave him an opportunity to repent, and left him comforting words of instruction, that he might still hope in the Lord, Romans 15:4. He also gave His Holy Spirit to assist man in living out that word, in approaching to God, Romans 8:26. Next He gave all the holy angels to minister to the wants of those who should be in trial through serving God, Hebrews 1:14. Only one other gift remained that God could bestow upon fallen man -- His only begotten Son.

2. How much does God love the world?

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life," John 3:16.

3. Did God wait for man to return to Him before sending His Son to die?

"But God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us," Romans 5:8.

4. What did the Lord Jesus Himself do that we might have eternal riches?

"For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor, that ye through His poverty might be rich," II Corinthians 8:9.

5. How rich was the Son of God?

"Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, Whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by Whom also He made the worlds," Hebrews 1:2. See also John 17:5.

6. How poor was He when born?

"And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped Him in swaddling clothes, and laid Him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn," Luke 2:7.

7. Was He any better provided for when He had grown to man's estate?

"And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head," Matthew 8:20.

8. What trials did He pass through on man's behalf?

"For we have not an High Priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin," Hebrews 4:15.

9. What did He do to show His sympathy for those in affliction?

"And He healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils," Mark 1:34.

10. How was He received by those whom He came to save?

"He came unto His own, and His own received Him not," John 1:11.

11. After choosing some disciples toward whom He felt much tenderness, what did one of them do in return for His love?

"And immediately, while He yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. And he that betrayed Him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is He; take Him, and lead Him away safely. And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to Him, and saith, Master, Master; and kissed Him. And they laid their hands on Him, and took Him," Mark 14:43-46.

12. Why did Judas thus betray his Master?

"Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests and said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver Him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver," Matthew 26:14, 15.

13. What was first done with the Savior after His betrayal?

He was taken to the high priest's house (Mark 14:53) where He was buffeted and spit upon (verse 65). He was next taken before Pilate (Mark 15:1), where He was mocked by the soldiers (verses 17-19), until finally they led Him to the place of crucifixion. Here He was nailed to the cross, and amid the taunts and insults of His persecutors, He was lifted up on the cross of Calvary, to die for the world. God's love was shown toward the world in that He did not withdraw His Son from the earth when He was so maltreated, and thus leave man to perish. But He so loved the world that He would suffer these terrible indignities to be heaped on His dear Son, if by this means He could but save fallen man.

14. What did the Savior say the repentance of one sinner causes in heaven?

"Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth," Luke 15:10.

15. After the prodigal son had wasted all his inheritance in a far country, and began to realize his wretched condition, what did he say?

"I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants," verses 18, 19.

16. On his return, how did his father meet him?

"And he arose and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him," verse 20.

17. What preparations were then made to give the prodigal a general welcome?

"The father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry," verses 22-24.

When the evening bells are tolling  
    And my days on earth are o'er,  
When I cross that swelling Jordan  
    To that dim and distant shore,  
When I reach that shining city  
    In that angel's home so fair,  
At the pearly gates of Eden  
    Will my Savior know me there?

On that bright and glorious morning,  
    In that land of endless day  
Will my Savior bid me welcome  
    To in peace forever stay?  
In that land of joy and gladness  
    Free from toil and earthly care,  
On that great eternal morning  
    Will my Savior know me there? -- Madoline Sprague

### **Ministration of Good Angels**

1. Does the apostle Paul in his writings speak of a family in heaven?

"For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named," Ephesians 3:14, 15.

2. Since Paul speaks of a family in heaven, by what name are the members commonly called?

"Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven," Matthew 18:10.

3. In the Revelation of Christ what is said about the number of these beings?

"And I beheld, and I heard the voices of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands," Revelation 5:11.

4. Does the apostle agree with Christ as to their number?

"But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels," Hebrews 12:22.

5. What is said regarding man's equality with the angels?

"For Thou hast made him a little lower than the angels," Psalm 8:5.

6. Have we any other proof that angels are higher beings than man?

"That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in heaven," Matthew 18:10.

7. Seeing that angels behold the face of God, is man allowed this privilege?

"No man hath seen God at any time," John 1:18.

"And He said, Thou canst not see My face: for there shall no man see Me, and live," Exodus 33:20.

8. What is said of the strength and character of the angels?

"Bless the Lord, ye His angels, that excel in strength, that do His commandments, harkening unto the voice of His word," Psalm 103:20.

9. As the angels are higher beings than man, to whom are they subject?

"Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto Him," (Christ) I Peter 3:22.

10. Are the angels interested in the salvation of men?

"Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth," Luke 15:10.

11. In what grand and noble work are the angels engaged?

"Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?" Hebrews 1:14.

12. Have we any Scripture indicating that each child of God has at least one accompanying angel?

"Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in heaven," Matthew 18:10.

13. How was Christ strengthened during His agony in Gethsemane?

"And there appeared an angel unto Him from heaven, strengthening Him," Luke 22:43.

14. In what way did the angel assist at the resurrection of Christ?

"And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it," Matthew 28:2.

15. What was the angel's appearance?

"His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow," Matthew 28:3.

16. What effect did he have on the Roman guards who were watching the tomb?

"And for fear of him the keepers did shake and became as dead men," Matthew 28:4.

17. Have we other incidents where angels have ministered to God's people?

"But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth," Acts 5:19.

18. In what way did God protect the Hebrew children while in the fiery furnace?

"Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who hath sent His angel, and delivered His servants that trusted in Him," Daniel 3:28.

19. How was Daniel protected while in the den of lions?

"My God hath sent His angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before Him innocency was found in me," Daniel 6:22.

NOTE: Many other scriptures could be used to show how God has protected His people in the past, and how many times His people were in sore distress, yet at the critical moment angels appeared on the scene, and proclaimed deliverance to those in trouble. While we today are not able to behold them with the natural eye, yet we have the assurance of their presence with us at all times.

20. Have we any scripture to sustain the foregoing note?

"The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear Him, and delivereth them," Psalm 34:7.

21. In the great time of trouble that is coming, have we a promise that the angels will be present?

"Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked . . . There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. For He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways," Psalm 91:8, 10, 11.

22. When Christ comes, who will come with Him?

"When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him," Matthew 25:31.

23. What work will be connected with His coming?

"And before Him shall be gathered all nations: and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats," Matthew 25:32.

24. What will then be said to the sheep, or righteous?

"Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world," Matthew 25:34.

25. Where will this kingdom be located?

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him," Daniel 7:27.

NOTE: May God hasten the time when the conclusion of this lesson will be made a reality.

E-T-E-R-N-I-T-Y, The LONGEST name for Time  
That mighty ONENESS of eternal day;  
Ever and anon its GLORY will shine,  
Recording CYCLES of time FAR away.  
No tears, No DEATH, no crying -- no more strife,  
Immortal LIFE, with nothing to annoy;  
Through endless DAY eat from the TREE of life,  
Yielding FRUIT, for ALL the saved to enjoy. -- I. S. Sherwin

### **Not Hearers, But Doers**

1. Why was the promise made to Abraham that he, and his seed should inherit the earth?

"Because that Abraham obeyed My voice, and kept My charge, My



commandments, My statues, and My laws," Genesis 26:5.

2. With whom will the Lord keep covenant, and shew mercy?

"Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations," Deuteronomy 7:9.

3. Upon whom does Christ pronounce a blessing?

"But He said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it," Luke 11:28.

4. Will all those saying, Lord, Lord, be saved in the end?

"Not everyone that sayeth unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven," Matthew 7:21.

5. Then who will be allowed to enter?

"But he that doeth the will of My Father which is in heaven," same verse.

6. What plea will many have in that great day?

"Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy name? and in Thy name have cast out devils? and in Thy name done many wonderful works?" Matthew 7:22.

7. What answer will they receive?

"And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity," Matthew 7:23.

8. To whom are the obedient likened?

"Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock," Matthew 7:24.

9. To whom are those likened, which hear, but fail to obey?

"And everyone that heareth these saying of Mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand," Matthew 7:26.

10. Who does Paul say shall be justified?

"For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified," Romans 2:13.

11. What does James say?

"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all," James 2:10.

12. Of what law is James speaking?

He says in the next verse, "For He that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law," James 2:11.

13. Who was the author of the words that said, "Do not commit adultery," and also, "Do not kill"?

"These words the Lord spake . . . and He added no more. And He wrote them in two tables of stone," Deuteronomy 5:22.

NOTE: By reading Exodus 20, and Deuteronomy 5, we find the contents of the two tables of stone. Ten precepts in all, and these are what James had reference to when he said, "For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point is guilty of all."

14. In what way does James say one should show their faith?

"Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works," James 2:18.

15. And what of faith if it have not works?

"But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?" James 2:20.

16. By what was Abraham justified?

"Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? . . . Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only," James 2:21-24.

17. In what condition must one be in order to eat the good of the land?

"If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land," Isaiah 1:19.

18. In what way must we show our love for Christ?

"If ye love Me, keep My commandments," John 14:15.

19. What will we do if we love Christ?

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make our abode with him," John 14:23.

20. Did Christ speak His own, or His Father's words?

"He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent Me," John 14:24.

21. How may we abide in Christ's love?

"If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love," John 15:10.

22. Did Christ speak His own commandments?

"For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak," Romans 15:18.

23. Should Gentiles be obedient to God?

"For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed," John 12:49.

24. Who will have the privilege of entering the Holy City?

"Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

25. By what name are those called who keep God's commandments?

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus," Revelation 14:12.

## The Two Laws

1. To whom were the ten commandments spoken?

"And the Lord spake unto you out of the midst of the fire . . . And He declared unto you His covenant, which He commanded you to perform, even ten commandments," Deuteronomy 4:12, 13. See also Exodus 20:1-17.

2. Was this a complete law?

"These words the Lord spake unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and He added no more," Deuteronomy 5:22.

3. By whom, and on what were the ten commandments written?

"And the Lord said unto Moses, Come up to Me into the mount, and be there: and I will give thee tables of stone, and a law, and commandments which I have written; that thou mayest teach them," Exodus 24:12.

"And He gave unto Moses, when He had made an end of communing with him upon Mount Sinai, two tables of testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of God," chapter 31:18.

4. After this law had been written by God and delivered to Moses, where was it kept?

"And I turned myself and came down from the mount, and put the tables in the ark which I had made; and there they be, as the Lord commanded me," Deuteronomy 10:5.

5. Did Moses give a law?

"Moses commanded us a law, even the inheritance of the congregation of Jacob," Deuteronomy 33:4.

"And Moses wrote this law," 31:9.

6. In what was the law of Moses written?

"And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the words of this law in a book, until they were finished," Deuteronomy 31:24.

7. After Moses had made an end of writing this law, then where was it put?

"Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the Lord your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee," verse 26.

NOTE: God's law was kept in the ark, and the law of Moses in the side of the ark.

8. By what is sin recognized?

"Because the law worketh wrath; for where no law is, there is no transgression," Romans 4:15.

9. What law is sin the transgression of?

"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For He that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law," James 2:10, 11.

NOTE: These two commandments are found in the writing of God as it was recorded upon the two tables of stone, and James tells us if we violate one of the ten we are guilty of all.

10. What is the character of the ten commandments?

"Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good," Romans 7:12. See also Nehemiah 9:13; Psalm 219:172.

11. What is said of the law of Moses?

"Because they had not executed My judgments, but had despised My statutes, and

had polluted My sabbaths, and their eyes were after their fathers' idols. Wherefore I gave them also statutes that were not good, and judgments whereby they should not live," Ezekiel 20:24, 25.

12. Why, then, was the ceremonial law given?

"Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made," Galatians 3:19.

13. What was the ceremonial law?

"For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect," Hebrews 10:1.

14. What is the nature of God's law?

"For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin," Romans 7:14.

15. How long was the law of ceremonies to continue?

"Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come," Galatians 3:19.

16. At the death of Christ what became of this law?

"Having abolished in His flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in Himself of twain one new man, so making peace," Ephesians 2:15.

17. Where was this law nailed?

"Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross," Colossians 2:14.

18. How long did Christ say the law of God would continue?

"For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled," Matthew 5:18.

19. Can one be subject to the law of God while their mind is carnal?

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be," Romans 8:7.

20. What did the Savior state as one of the conditions of entering into eternal life?

"And He said unto him, Why callest thou Me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments," Matthew 19:17.

21. What promise is made to those who keep the law of "ten commandments?"

"Blessed are they that do His [God's] commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city," Revelation 22:14.

22. Who will be justified before God, the hearers, or the doers of His law?

"For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified," Romans 2:13.

We can almost see the glimmer  
Of the lights upon the shore,  
Almost hear the shout of glory,  
From the sweet forever more.  
Light of ages soon thy splendor,  
Dims the brightest noon-day sun,

When thy coming and thy kingdom  
And thy will on earth is done.



## Lesson 12

### The Two Olive Trees

1. In the eleventh chapter of Romans, what great lesson is presented by the apostle Paul?

Answer, The olive trees.

2. In what condition were these two olive trees?

"For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?" Romans 11:24.

NOTE: By this reading we learn, that, one of these olive trees was of the good kind, while the other one was of the wild variety.

3. What name was given the literal family of Abraham?

"The Lord called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit," Jeremiah 11:16.

4. What was the practice of Abraham, that prompted God to call him and his seed by this name?

"Because that Abraham obeyed My voice, and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws," Genesis 26:5.

5. Were the teachings of Abraham in accordance with his life?

"For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He hath spoken of him," Genesis 18:19.

6. Did the family of Abraham, or tame olive tree, have the advantage of the wild, and how?

"What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision? Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God," Romans 3:1, 2.

7. While the family of Abraham continued to walk in the ways of God, what kind of a people would they be?

"Now therefore, if ye will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth is Mine: and ye shall be unto Me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation," Exodus 19:5, 6.

8. Mention another promise made this people if they would continue to be obedient to God.

"And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all His commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: and all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God," Deuteronomy 28:1, 2.

9. What if they failed to obey the voice of God?

"And if ye shall despise My statutes, or if your soul abhor My judgments, so that

ye will not do all My commandments, but that ye break My covenant: I also will do this unto you . . . And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you," Leviticus 26:15-17.

10. Because of disobedience to God, what did Israel become?

"And Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people," I Kings 9:7, last part of verse.

11. Because of disobedience, what was said of their eyes?

"Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back always," Romans 11:10.

12. Why were the branches broken from this tame olive tree?

"Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear," verse 20.

13. When the tame or natural branches were broken off, what was grafted into the root of the tame tree to take the place of the branches that were broken off?

"And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree," verse 17.

14. At one time, in what condition were the Gentiles?

"Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; that at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world," Ephesians 2:11, 12.

15. How were these wild branches grafted into the tame tree?

"For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?" Romans 11:24.

NOTE: If they had been grafted according to nature they would bear the same old wild fruit they had been bearing all the time. As they were grafted contrary to nature they must bear the same fruit as the tree into which they were grafted, which would bring them to a standard of right doing, or in other words, "keeping the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus," which is the standard by which the human family will be judged in the final judgment day.

16. What words of warning are given these branches?

"Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: for if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee," verses 20, 21.

17. Upon what grounds will goodness be extended to these branches?

"Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in His goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off," verse 22.

18. On what grounds will the branches that were broken off be grafted in again?



"And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again," verse 23.

19. For how long a time will the blinded branches remain in that condition?

"For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in," verse 25.

NOTE: The blindness here referred to was the Jewish people rejecting Christ. At the present time many of them are accepting Him as their sacrifice, and they will accept Him more, until when He shall come again thousands of them will be glad to see Him coming in the clouds of heaven. This is one sign that we have of the nearness of Christ's return to the earth. It is also a sign that Gentile times are nearing a close.

### **The Colored Man: His Origin, Religion, and Destiny**

1. What were the names of the three sons born to Noah, the posterity of whom lived on this side of the flood, and populated the whole earth?

"And Noah was five hundred years old: and Noah begat Shem, Ham, and Japheth," Genesis 5:32.

2. From which of these sons did the colored race originate, and how do we know?

"And the sons of Ham; Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan," Genesis 10:6. The word "Ham" as a Hebrew adjective always means black and warm, therefore as the name "Ham" was given to this son of Noah, it signifies the color, and thus the origination of the colored race.

The name "Ethiopia" is the Greek and Roman equivalent for the Hebrew name "Cush," who was the descendant of Ham. Cushite in the Hebrew is the same as Ethiopian in the Greek and Roman, and the Cushites settled the country of Ethiopia, which in Bible times was known as the unbounded lands south of Egypt, spoken of also as the land of Ham.

3. What further Bible proof have we that the Ethiopian race are the colored people?

"Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots?" Jeremiah 13:23.

NOTE: Ham is the only son of Noah after whom a country was named. This is spoken of as the land of Ham in Psalms 105:23, 27, also 106:22, as well as elsewhere. The term Ethiopia is a Greek and Roman word, meaning "Cush" in the Hebrew. The Ethiopians or Cushites were black, and Jeremiah declared they could not change their color. The late geographical name for this country is Abyssinia.

4. Have the colored people taken an active part with the chosen people of God during the past ages?

Moses married an Ethiopian woman, Numbers 12:1. The queen of Sheba, who journeyed to meet King Solomon, I Kings 10:1-3; II Chronicles 9:1-12, was also a colored woman. Sheba was the capitol city of Ethiopia, and this queen was queen of the Ethiopians.

5. When the prophet Jeremiah was cast into a dungeon and about to perish who reported his condition to the king, and led the soldiers to his rescue?

"Now when Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, one of the eunuchs which was in the king's house, heard that they had put Jeremiah in the dungeon; the king then sitting in the gate of Benjamin; Ebed-melech went forth out of the king's house, and spake to the king . . . Then the king commanded Ebed-melech the Ethiopian, saying, take from hence thirty men with thee, and take up Jeremiah the prophet out of the dungeon, before he die," Jeremiah 38:7, 8, 10.

6. What direct Bible evidence do we have that the angels of God are watching over colored people, to prepare them for eternal life the same as they are over the white?

"And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert," Acts 8:26.

7. Did Philip, the minister of God, obey, and in doing so what did he find?

"And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship, was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias [Isaiah] the prophet," verse 27, 28.

8. What did the Spirit then say to Philip?

"Go near, and join thyself to this chariot," verse 29.

9. Did Philip, under the direction of the angel, esteem this man a fit subject for salvation even though he was an Ethiopian? What was the outcome of this meeting and Bible study?

"They went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him," verse 38. Read verses 30 to 40 inclusive.

NOTE: It is a known fact of history that this eunuch, who was treasurer of Ethiopia, carried back to his people the Christian religion, the glad tidings of the Son of God, Who had come into the world, and that His message was accepted. Since the very commencement of this nation, from seven hundred years before Moses, these people have observed the seventh day Sabbath, as David and Solomon. Being attracted by this common religion, the queen of Sheba made her journey to visit king Solomon at Jerusalem, and the two nations were blended together in the friendly ties of mutual interests.

Unlike the Hebrews, however, the Ethiopian people accepted Jesus as the promised Messiah, and following in His steps, they continued to observe the seventh day of the week as He did. Even today many of them observe the true Sabbath of the Lord.

They withstood the power of the Roman church, also the Mohammedan invasions. Therefore they have never been compelled to give up the religion of Jesus Christ, as the rest of the world during the dark ages, when Sunday was forced upon them under civil law without Bible authority.

Knowing their devotion to God from the scriptures, and the part they have had in matters of importance pertaining to His work, as well as the special direction of Philip to the Ethiopian eunuch, no reasonably minded person could say that they do not have an equal chance for eternal life with that of other races. Paul says, "There is neither Jew nor

Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus," Galatians 3:28. See also Colossians 3:11.

### **Do You Love the World, or God?**

1. Is it possible for one to serve two masters?

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon," Matthew 6:24.

2. In what condition are those who are friends of the world?

"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God," James 4:4.

3. What words of instruction are given by John on this subject?

"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world," I John 2:15.

4. Is it possible for one to entertain the love of the Father, and of the world at the same time?

"If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him," I John 2:15.

5. From what source does the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life come?

"For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world," I John 2:16.

6. What will become of these?

"And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof," I John 2:17.

7. What of those who show their love for God, by doing His will?

"But he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever," I John 2:17.

8. What is the whole duty of man?

"Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man," Ecclesiastes 12:13.

9. In what way may we show our love for God?

"For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments," I John 5:3.

10. Are His commandments difficult and hard to bear?

"His commandments are not grievous," I John 5:3.

11. In what way does Christ say for us to show our love for Him?

"If ye love Me, keep My commandments," John 14:15.

12. Out of the multitudes of the earth, who are the ones that love the Son?

"He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me," John 14:21.

13. And whom will they be loved by?

"And He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him," John 14:21.

14. What will one practice if they really love the Father and the Son?

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My words," John 14:23.

15. By their daily life, who are the ones who have not love for God?

"He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the word which ye hear is not

Mine but the Father's which sent me," John 14:24.

16. Did Christ teach His own, or His Father's commandments?

"For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father Which sent Me, He gave Me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak," John 12:49.

17. What is love?

"And this is love, that we walk after His commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it," II John 6. See also I John 5:3 and Exodus 20:3-17.

18. In what way may we know that the love of God is perfected in us?

"But whoso keepeth His word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in Him," I John 2:5.

### **The Five Kingdoms**

1. In the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar by what peculiar circumstance was he surrounded?

"In the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him," Daniel 2:1.

2. Was he anxious to know the dream and its meaning?

"And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream," Daniel 2:3.

3. What man was used by God to make this dream known to the king?

"Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel in a night vision. Then Daniel blessed the God of heaven," Daniel 2:19.

4. Why was this dream revealed to the prophet Daniel?

"But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living, but for their sakes that shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that thou mightest know the thoughts of thy heart," Daniel 2:30.

5. What message did Daniel bring to the king concerning his dream?

"Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible," Daniel 2:31.

6. Of what was this image composed?

"This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, his legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay," verses 32, 33.

7. What did Daniel see smiting this image upon the feet?

"Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces," verse 34.

8. What happened to this image when the stone smote it upon the feet?

"Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth," verse 35.

9. Of what empire was Nebuchadnezzar king?

"Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north, saith the Lord, and

Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon," Jeremiah 25:9.

10. Concerning the head of gold what did Daniel say to the king?

"Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath He given unto thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold," Daniel 2:37, 38.

NOTE: The Babylonian empire, the richest and shortest in duration began 602 B.C. and ended B.C. 538.

11. Was there to be a second universal empire represented by the "Breast and arms of silver?"

"And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee," verse 39.

12. According to the Bible what would be the second universal rule?

"Behold, I will stir up the Medes against them, which shall not regard silver; and as for gold, they shall not delight in it . . . And Babylon the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah, Isaiah 13:17, 19.

"Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians," Daniel 5:28.

NOTE: According to history, the Medo-Persian empire was the one that followed the Babylonian kingdom, and began in the year 538 B.C. and ended B.C. 331.

13. What does the brass in this image represent?

"And another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth," Daniel 2:39.

14. According to the Bible what empire would be the third to rule the world?

"The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king," Daniel 8:20, 21.

NOTE: History tells us that the Grecian empire under Alexander the Great was the third one to rule the world, and came upon the stage of action B.C. 331. It lasted only about twelve years, when it was divided into four divisions. The last of these passed away in the year 168 B.C.

15. What is said of the fourth kingdom, or division of this great image?

"And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise," Daniel 2:40.

NOTE: The Roman empire was the fourth universal empire to rule the world. This was the empire that was ruling the world while Christ was on the earth, and He was tried before the Roman courts. The Roman empire was much stronger and lasted much longer than any of the preceding ones, acquiring universal rule by the year 46 B.C., although it

was founded at a much earlier date. About the year 395 A.D. it was divided into its eastern and western divisions to represent the two limbs of the great metallic image. Some years later it was divided into ten divisions to represent the ten toes on the feet of this image. We can see how history responds to the call of divine prophecy, and that the world has come down in the image of a man for whose purpose it was created.

16. What conditions would be in the world after this fourth empire had reached its divided state?

"And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay," verses 42, 43.

NOTE: One can easily see the conditions as they are at the present time, that the nations are separate and broken apart. These people have been engaged in the worst war of the world's history, which is in harmony with this prophecy. We can expect upheavals at different times during the remaining years of this present dispensation.

17. In the days of the divided state of the Roman empire what great change will take place?

"And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever," verse 44.

18. Under this fifth universal rule, or kingdom of Christ what conditions will exist?

"And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more," Isaiah 2:4.

19. During this time who will be king over all the earth?

"And the Lord shall be King over all the earth: in that day there shall be one Lord, and His name one," Zechariah 14:9.

We have girded on the armor,  
And our banner is unfurled; --  
'Tis the standard of Mt. Zion,  
And we'll face a frowning world.

We have on the only breastplate,  
'Tis the shield of truth and right;  
And the sword which we are using  
Is mighty in the fight.

We are told to hold out faithful, --  
By the grace of God we stand  
And we'll work beneath this banner  
Till we reach the promised land.

Our Captain Judea's Lion:  
Our weary hearts doth cheer,  
He's the Holy one of Zion,  
And tells us not to fear.

### The Four Beasts

1. During whose reign did Daniel receive the vision of Daniel 7th chapter?

"In the first year of Belshazzar," Daniel 7:1.

2. Over what empire was Belshazzar king?

"In the first year of Belshazzar, king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, and told the sum of the matters," verse 1.

3. What did the prophet first see in this vision?

"Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and behold, the four winds of heaven strove upon the great sea," verse 2.

4. In prophecy what does wind represent?

"A noise shall come even to the ends of the earth; for the Lord hath a controversy with the nations. He will plead with all flesh; He will give them that are wicked to the sword, saith the Lord. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Behold, evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth, and the slain of the Lord shall be at that day from one end of the earth, even unto the other end of the earth; they shall not be lamented, neither gathered, nor buried; they shall be dung upon the ground," Jeremiah 25:31-33.

NOTE: By this scripture we learn, that wind in prophecy represents war, commotion and strife, resulting in death and destruction.

5. What is the prophetic meaning of water?

"And He saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues," Revelation 17:15.

NOTE: From this we learn, that, water in the prophetic books of the Bible has reference to peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues. So instead of the vision of the old prophet being literal wind striving upon literal water, it was war, commotion and strife, among peoples, multitudes, nations and tongues.

6. What was the result of this strife?

"And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another," Daniel 7:3.

7. What do these four beasts represent?

"These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth," verse 17.

8. What was the first beast like?

"The first was like a lion, and had eagles wings; I beheld till the wings thereof were

plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it," verse 4.

NOTE: This first beast (like the golden head of the great image of the second chapter of Daniel) represents the Babylonian empire. At first the beast had eagles wings, denoting the rapidity with which Babylon extended its conquests under Nebuchadnezzar. When this vision was given, a great change had taken place; its wings had been plucked, and it no longer flew upon its prey as does the eagle. The bold spirit of the lion was gone, and a man's heart, weak and faint had taken its place. Such was the condition of the Babylonian empire under Belshazzar, who was connected with the ruling power of this empire when it came to its end.

9. By what was the second kingdom represented?

"And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it; and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh," verse 5.

NOTE: History tells us, that, the Medo-Persian empire was the second one to rule the world. This beast was seen coming up on one side, and this is an exact representation of the medo-Persian empire. History tells us the Medes were at first the leading people of this empire, but the Persians came up last and became far the stronger tribe of people. These people were to some extent, ravenous and blood thirsty as is the bear, by which they are represented.

10. By what was the third universal empire symbolized?

"After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl: the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it," verse 6.

NOTE: The third universal empire to rule the world, was that of Alexander the Great. Two wings, the number the lion had, were not sufficient, the leopard had four; denoting unparalleled swiftness of movement. This we find to be historically true of the Grecian empire under the famous Alexander. The conquests of the Grecian empire have no parallel in historic annals for suddenness and rapidity.

"This beast had also four heads." The Grecian empire maintained its unity but very little longer than the lifetime of Alexander, when it was divided into four divisions, or between the four leading generals of Alexander, to represent the four heads of this third beast of the great vision.

They are as follows, Lysimachus, Seleucus Nicator, Ptolemy, and Cassander, who had each assumed the title of king. The great horn being broken, in its place came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven. Myers General History, page 170 of the 1903 edition.

11. By what is the fourth kingdom represented?

"After this I saw in the night vision, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and



terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth; it devoured and break in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it; and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns. I considered the horns, and behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots; and, behold in this horn were eyes like the eyes of a man, and a mouth speaking great things," verses 7, 8.

NOTE: The Roman empire was the fourth one to rule the world, and is the one represented by this, the fourth beast of Daniel's vision. There is no beast among all the beasts of the great creation of God like the one we have under consideration, neither has there been another kingdom in any age of the world's history that was so cruel as was the Roman kingdom. It was this kingdom that was ruling when Christ was upon the earth, and it was before Roman rulers that He was tried and condemned to death. The Roman kingdom, in its different phases, has to its credit between fifty and one hundred million martyrs who paid the supreme sacrifice for the cause of Christ. This great number were willing to suffer death rather than bow to the false teachings of the Catholic Church which held universal control during 1260 years of the time allotted to the fourth kingdom, represented by this fourth beast, the fourth universal government of earth's history.

12. What do the ten horns of this beast represent?

"And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise," verse 24.

NOTE: By reading history we learn, that, the Roman kingdom was divided into ten divisions to represent the ten horns of this beast. These divisions occurred between the years 350 and 485 A. D. as we learn by different histories.

13. What is represented by the little horn that came up among the ten and plucked up three of them by the roots?

"And another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end," verses 24, 25, 26.

NOTE: This little horn that comes upon the stage of action, will be taken up and considered in another article of this book. In this we will see how history responds to the call of divine prophecy, proving beyond any question of doubt the truthfulness of the Bible, the book through which God has revealed His will to man, and shows that the Bible did not come as some who are ignorant of prophecy argue, by the will of man, but that it was given by the inspiration of the Creator, which is God Himself.

14. After this little horn power plays its part, then what happens?

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom

is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him," verse 27.

NOTE: Instead of another beast following this fourth, and as a consequence another kingdom arising in the earth to bear rule over the whole world, the prophet beheld until the last beast was given to the burning flames, verse 11. As history records only four kingdoms to rule the whole earth thus far and the Bible said that there would be just four we cannot expect Germany or any other to gain possession of the world and set up a universal empire. The next is destined by God Almighty to be the kingdom of God, and is to be given to the saints of the Most High.

The next universal kingdom then shall be given only to righteous people, and to no earthly government. Since the fourth empire was set up and Rome ruled the world, Mohammed attempted to establish the fifth world-wide kingdom, but failed in his effort. Napoleon then resolved like the mighty Alexander, to be world's conqueror, but in 1815 met his Waterloo. And so will any other king or ruler who attempts to follow their aspirations and usurp the place which belongs now to God, and to Him only. There were to be five kingdoms, four are past and the fifth will be the kingdom of God, as God has declared.

We cannot help noticing in this grand lesson from Holy Inspiration the certainty with which history responds to the call of the prophets. Historians who were unfamiliar with the voice of the prophets, have recorded the events which have taken place in the world since its beginning and they have accurately filled the mould made by the prophets of God thousands of years previously.

God has looked down through the dim and otherwise obscure future, and has revealed to the children of men the important events to take place. He has told us of the kingdoms that would arise and fall, of the great kings and of their career. Truly He has made known to us the future, and declared from ancient times the things that are not yet done, and has in this way proved beyond any question of doubt the divinity and authenticity of the Bible.

### Waymarks To The End

The guide boards all along the dreary road that His children would have to travel have been marked plainly directing their every step as they move forward toward the kingdom of their God. These guide boards have been placed there by the hand of God, many of which we have passed long ago, and can only be dimly seen while others are almost within our reach, some are present events, and others are yet future, which we of necessity must witness before we receive our inheritance in the kingdom of God.

God plainly said thousands of years ago that there would be just four kingdoms to rule the earth. History gives us a view of these four great monumental guideboards and says they are all in the past. We look backward as it were through this great telescope of history and see Babylon, far in the distance, Medo-Persia this side, next to her we see Greece, and next in her proper place we behold Rome, making the four just as God has said, while number five has not yet come.

### Theatrical Performances Already Staged

Babylon has long since had her day, and played her part on the great theatrical stage of the Universe of God. The curtain has fallen giving place to the next great performance and Medo-Persia appeared and played well her part just as God said she would in the sight of the whole world. The curtain fell and on to the theatrical stage came Greece. Her performance was given in the sight of men, and the curtain fell, giving place for the next great drama. Rome next came upon the stage of action and commenced her performance, and is still playing her part, but soon this last play will like the others be finished, and the curtain will fall giving place to the fifth and last great world wide performance which will be conducted in righteousness, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief actor, when verse 27 of this chapter will have its fulfillment, as accurate and complete as those previously mentioned above. It reads, "And the kingdom and dominion and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him."

Four kingdoms, through war, turmoil and strife have held dominion over the whole earth, and have, as truly as God's word says, broken it in pieces. The righteous reign of the Prince of Peace, the King of kings, and Lord of lords, is yet a future event which will as certainly come in its order as the kingdoms of men have arisen and fallen according to the divinely appointed program of the Almighty Jehovah, which has been given us from heaven. This is not only a condition greatly desired, at this time of trouble, but it is one the coming of which is based upon logical conclusions, predicated upon the eternal promise of God, who cannot lie. They will be realized in their order. They are ours to behold and enjoy if we are only faithful to the trust He has left us and do His will unto the end.

Truly the chronology of the past dispensations of human government, bears many records that stand like guide-posts, pointing with bloody hands to a new and better way. And beyond the blood stained past, and the ever darkening present, we can see the silver lining of the great beyond. Truly the dark storm clouds of war and destruction are penetrated by the positive assurance of God, that the fifth kingdom will be a reality. Yes, we can see the verdant shores of Eden blossoming with the flowers of peace, and yielding her fruits of love, and good will to men, and our hearts yearn for a realization of this blessed hope, which if faithful, is ours to enjoy.



## Lesson 13

### The Second Coming of Christ

1. After Christ's death, burial and resurrection from the dead, He ascended into heaven and a cloud received Him out of the sight of the apostles. Is there any evidence found in the scriptures that he will ever come back to the earth again?

"And when He had spoken these things, while they beheld He was taken up: and a cloud received Him out of their sight. And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel: which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven," Acts 1:9-11.

2. How long must the heavens receive and retain Jesus Christ, and when will God send Him back to the earth?

"And He shall send Jesus Christ which before was preached unto you; Whom the heaven must receive, until the times of the restitution of all things," Acts 3:20, 21.

3. Were Jesus' apostles interested in the subject of His returning to the earth, and what question did they ask Him?

"And as He sat upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately saying, Tell us when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of Thy coming and of the end of the world?" Matthew 24:3.

4. After Jesus answered their question by telling them of many conditions that would come upon the world, and important events that would happen, what did He say of His returning to the earth?

"Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven; and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory," Matthew 24:29, 30.

5. What do we find in the New Testament gospel according to Paul regarding the second coming of Christ?

"And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with His mighty angels," II Thessalonians 1:7.

"The Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trump of God," I Thessalonians 4:16.

6. How old is the doctrine of Christ's second coming?

"And Enoch also the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these saying, behold the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all," Jude 14, 15.

### The Manner of Christ's Coming

1. When Christ comes will He be in secret lodging for a time, and the news of His coming be made known by messengers, by telegraph, or by newspapers?

"Behold I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, He

is in the desert, go not fourth; behold He is in the secret chambers, believe it not," Matthew 24:25, 26.

2. Why are we admonished not to believe reports of Christ having come secretly, and that He is in the desert or in secret, somewhere?

"For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," Matthew 24:27.

3. Does the Bible teach that His coming will be silent, or accompanied with noise and the sound of the trumpet?

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with the trump of God," I Thessalonians 4:16.

4. Will the people of the world see Him when He comes?

"Behold He cometh with clouds and every eye shall see Him," Revelation 1:7.

5. Will the sight of the coming of Christ from heaven, cause the wicked people of the earth to mourn?

"And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven, and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory," Matthew 24:30.

6. What will the great and mighty men do, in that day, to hide themselves from the presence of Christ who sitteth upon the throne, as he comes in the clouds of heaven?

"And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains; and said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For the great day of His wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" Revelation 6:15-17.

7. Who will accompany Christ when He returns to the earth?

"When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory," Matthew 25:31.

I often wonder as the hours  
Of life pass swiftly by,  
If when the trumpet sounds aloud  
From out the thickening sky;  
And he maketh up His jewels  
Gathers to Himself His own,  
Will we be among that number  
That shall worship 'round His throne? -- Leota Neal

### **We Know Not the Day Nor the Hour**

1. Is it possible for one to know the day and hour of Christ's coming?

"But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only," Matthew 24:36.

2. What words of admonition are given by Christ regarding His coming?

"Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come," Matt. 24:42.

3. Since Christ tells us to watch, has He not given us something to watch?

"So, likewise ye, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand," Luke 21:31.

4. What statement does Christ make concerning the city of Jerusalem, connecting it with His coming?

"And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations; And Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled," Luke 21:24.

NOTE: The city of Jerusalem, after having been occupied, and controlled by Gentile people almost all the time since the days of Christ, until the year 1918, was in the above year wrested from that people who have controlled it through all these years and today the movement is on foot in many countries, of giving that city, as well as country to the Jewish people as a national home.

5. Have we any prophecies concerning the gathering of the literal Jews?

"And He shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth," Isaiah 11:12. "Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven them in mine anger . . . and I will cause them to dwell safely," Jeremiah 32:37. See also Zechariah 12:7; Joel 3.

6. What condition did Christ say would be in the world just preceding His coming?

"And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring," Luke 21:25.

NOTE: Especially does Christ mention the distress of nations. We look back over a few years of the world's history to the year 1914, and as all know the great war broke out upon the world, as thunder from the clear sky, worse and worse, until nine tenths of the world's population were engaged. And well does this condition agree with the latter part of the verse under consideration. "The sea, and the waves roaring," If the reader will turn to Revelation 17:15, he will find "water representing peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues." Truly the nations were more angry during the past conflict than at any other time during the history of the world and continued in that condition until the Turk was driven from Palestine. Then came the lull, as well as a world wide movement for the re-establishment of the Jew in his own land, which is the fulfillment of Christ's words. "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

7. In the Revelation of Christ what is said regarding the condition of the world just preceding His second coming?

"And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come," Revelation 11:18.

8. What proof have we that this condition will be in the world when Christ returns?

"And the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that Thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear Thy name small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth," Revelation 11:18.

9. Near the coming of Christ what will be the condition of the world as compared to the days of Lot?

"Likewise also as it were in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed," Luke 17:28-30.

10. How does Paul speak of the last days of this present dispensation?

"This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come," II Timothy 3:1.

11. Will the people at this time enjoy hearing doctrine or fables preached?

"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables," II Timothy 4:3-4.

NOTE: Those who are studying the conditions of the world at the present time, and weighing them in the light of the divine word, know full well that the conditions are here as the great apostle said they would be in the last days.

12. What is said of evil men and seducers?

"But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived," II Timothy 3:13.

13. How does Paul speak of the Jewish people in the last days?

"For I would not brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery; lest ye should be wise in your own conceits: that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in," Romans 11:25.

NOTE: Only in the last few years has this statement commenced to meet its fulfillment. The Jewish people who once rejected Christ as their Savior, are now accepting him by the hundreds, and is another living witness to the fact that we are nearing the close of Gentile rule, and the coming of Christ draweth nigh.

14. Does Paul say we would or would not be in darkness as to the coming of Christ?

"But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief," I Thessalonians 5:4.

15. And what of the fig tree?

"Now learn a parable of the fig tree; when his branch is yet tender, and puteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh. So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things know that it [margin He] is near, even at the doors," Matthew 24:32, 33.

Watchman on the walls of Zion

What, O tell us, of the night?

Is the day-star now arising?

Will the morn soon greet our sight?

O'er your vision.

Shine there now some rays of light?"



## The Signs of the Times

1. What signs are given, of a social nature, indicating the soon coming of Christ?

"This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affections, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof; from such turn away," II Timothy 3:1-5.

NOTE: The above statements are true at the present time. There has never been any age of the world that would suit this prophecy as well as does the one in which we live. For instance, "Lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God," In this age of the world's history, the picture shows, and theatres are filled to their capacity, while the church is almost empty, and the people of today care nothing at all for the Bible, as all know who are watching the conditions of the world, and weighing them in the light of God's word in order that they may locate the age of the world in which we are living. Truly the above prophecies are a light to the feet of the Christian.

2. What prophecy connected with the second coming of Christ has had a remarkable fulfillment during the past fifty years?

"Behold the hire of the laborers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth," James 5:4.

3. What will wealth gained in this way prove to be in the day of final judgment?

"Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days," James 5:2, 3.

NOTE: We could fill page after page showing the fulfillment of this prophecy, but this is a matter of general knowledge to all; labor trouble, strikes and the concentration of wealth are all matters which have developed largely during the last fifty years, and as the apostle has said, these things will stand against those engaged in them, and there will then be no way of escape.

4. What prophecy of the Old Testament is being fulfilled at the present time, which is a sign of the near coming of Christ?

"But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: may shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased," Daniel 12:4.

NOTE: The present generation is eyewitness to the wonderful increase of knowledge the certainty of which the intelligent mind will not doubt. It seems only as yesterday in our history when the scythe, cradle and old fashioned treadmill were used to harvest our hay and grain. The ox team still lingers in our memory while now in its stead we have the steam tractors, and the automobile. This advancement commenced

immediately following the dethroning of the power of darkness, at the expiration of the 1260 prophetic years, which was to mark the commencement of the time of the end. In 1807 the steam boat was invented, in 1811 the steam printing press, in 1819 the locomotive, matches 1829, the reaper and mower in 1832, the photographic camera 1840, the telegraph in 1859, modern typewriter 1868, electric light, first exhibited 1876, telephone patented 1876, talking machine 1877, trolley car 1879, typesetting machine 1884, and wireless telegraphy 1896. Besides these named there are countless other inventions equally as important and wonderful. Go back with me to a period, one hundred years ago, and we find almost the same conditions existing there as were three thousand years before. It seems that this long river upon whose drowsy surface not a ripple of advancement had passed for three thousand years, suddenly burst into the white foam of violent agitation. Men's minds began to blossom forth into myriads of inventions until within the past sixty years, six hundred thousand patents have been issued by the patent office at Washington, D.C.

5. To what age of the world did Christ compare His coming?

"But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," Matthew 24:37.

6. What condition existed in the days of Noe?

"For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark," Matthew 24:38.

7. Were they aware of what was going to happen to them?

"And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away," verse 39.

8. Will the same condition exist when Christ comes the second time?

"So shall also the coming of the Son of man be," verse 39.

9. What will the tribes of the earth do when they behold the Son of God coming in the clouds?

"And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory," verse 30.

### **Social Signs of Christ's Coming**

1. What conditions will be in the world near the second coming of Christ?

"But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," Matthew 24:37.

2. What were the conditions in the days of Noah?

"For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," Matthew 24:38, 39.

3. What about a great increase of knowledge at this time?

"But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased," Daniel 12:4.

NOTE: It is a fact known to all, that, the century just passed, and the one in which we now live are unsurpassed by any age of this world's history, as far as advancement and inventive skill is concerned. This condition is wholly in accordance with the prophecy of Daniel, and is one of the signboards along the way by which we may be guided safely unto the day of perfection.

4. How will some receive this explanation of signs?

"Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of His coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation," II Peter 3:3, 4.

5. What is said of the hoarding of wealth, as one of the signs?

"Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are motheaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasures together for the last days," James 5:1-3.

NOTE: During the last fifty years treasures have been heaped together, as never before in the history of the world. And especially in the last ten years have men been heaping to themselves millions of dollars. In fact, the desire of the human family is money above everything else.

6. In connection with gaining wealth, what does James say of labor troubles?

"Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth," James 5:4.

7. Will there be a cry of peace before Christ comes among people who do not understand the prophecies?

"For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape," I Thessalonians 5:3.

8. Are the brethren of Christ included in this ignorant and unconcerned class?

"But ye brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief," I Thessalonians 5:4.

### **Can We Know Near the Time of His Coming?**

1. Will Christ's people be in darkness regarding His coming, so that He will come upon them at an unexpected time as a thief in the night?

"But ye brethren are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light and the children of the day; we are not of the night nor of darkness," I Thessalonians 5:4, 5.

2. As we are plainly informed by the sacred word that Christ's brethren will not be in darkness regarding the time of His coming, what does the Bible say of the wicked?

"But the wicked shall do wickedly, and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand," Daniel 12:10.

3. What does the Bible further tell us of how Christ will come upon the hypocrite,

and all who will be cut asunder?

"The . . . Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for Him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth," Matthew 24:50, 51.

4. Have we any admonition in the Word to watch, that Christ will not come upon us as a thief?

"If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and if thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee," Revelation 3:3.

5. As God has repeatedly given His people instructions to watch, with the promise that they will not be in darkness regarding this important event of the return of Jesus, what has He given us to watch?

"We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts," II Peter 1:19.

6. After Christ had given a series of events that would transpire in the world before His coming, what figure for illustration did He give, to impress upon them how simple and plain, the signs in the world would be, that His coming was near?

"Now learn a parable of the fig tree, when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh; So likewise, ye, when we shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the door," Matthew 24:32, 33.

7. What warning does Christ give His people lest there be danger of His coming upon them unawares?

"And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares," Luke 21:34.

8. What other sign was to mark His advent?

"There shall come a Star out of Jacob and a Scepter shall rise out of Israel," Numbers 24:17.

9. To whom did this star appear?

"There came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is He that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen His star in the east, and are come to worship Him . . . . And lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was," Matthew 2:1, 2, 9.

10. What was predicted of the little children in connection with the birth of Christ?

"A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not," Jeremiah 31:15.

11. How were these words of the prophet verified?

"Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and . . . in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, In Rama there was a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they

were not," Matthew 2:16-18.

12. How was He to be received by His own people?

"He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not," Isaiah 53:3.

13. Did this prophecy prove true?

"He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not," John 1:10, 11.

14. What was predicted of His preaching?

"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me; because the Lord hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He hath sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound," Isaiah 61:1.

15. In what way was this prediction verified?

"And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up; and, as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto Him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when He had opened the book, He found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because He hath anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor: He hath sent Me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised . . . And He began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears," Luke 4:16-21.

16. How was it said He would do when on trial?

"He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth; He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth," Isaiah 53:7.

17. When accused by His enemies before Pilate, how did Christ receive their words?

"Then said Pilate unto Him, Hearest Thou not how many things they witness against Thee? And He answered him never a word; insomuch that the governor marveled greatly," Matthew 27:13, 14.

18. How did the prophecy state that Christ's murderers would dispose of His garments?

"They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon My vesture," Psalms 22:18.

19. Was this literally accomplished?

"And they crucified Him, and parted His garment, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted My garments among them, and upon My vesture did they cast lots," Matthew 27:35.

20. How was it said they would treat Him while on the cross?

"They gave me also gall for My meat; and in My thirst they gave Me vinegar to drink," Psalms 69:21.

21. What was offered Him when in His dying agony?

"They gave Him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when He had tasted thereof, He would not drink," Matthew 27:34.

22. Where was the grave of Christ to be made?

"And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in His death," Isaiah 53:9.

23. What was actually done with His body, after it was taken down from the cross?

"A rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph . . . went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus . . . He wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and laid it in his own new tomb which he had hewn out in the rock," Matthew 27:57-60.

### **The Spirits in Prison**

1. In what way did Christ suffer for the unjust?

"For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit," I Peter 3:18.

2. By what was He quickened, or made alive?

"Quickened by the Spirit," see the same verse.

3. By what did He preach unto the spirits, or people in the prison house of sin?

"By which [same Spirit that raised Him from the dead] also He went and preached unto the spirits [people] in prison," verse 19.

4. To what age of the world does Peter especially refer?

"Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water," verse 20.

NOTE: We learn that in the days of Noah that the same spirit that raised Christ from the dead helped Noah deliver his message. It was in the time when Noah was building his ark, at the time where there were only eight souls saved. It was not in the time that Christ lay silent in the tomb. And the same spirit will help us today to preach the true message.

5. From what was Christ to deliver the people?

"To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house," Isaiah 42:7.

6. In one of Christ's sermons, what did He say His mission was?

"The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because He hath anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor; He hath sent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised," Luke 4:18.

### **The Chastisement of the Jewish People**

1. What great calamity befell the Jewish people?

"For, lo, I will command, and I will sift the house of Israel among all nations, like as corn is sifted in a sieve," Amos 9:9.

2. During this time would there be a colony or government established by them?

"Yet shall not the least grain fall upon the earth," verse 9, last part.

NOTE: The grain of corn dropped upon the ground will gradually be covered with dirt, and springing up will grow into a large stalk of corn. God has declared that such would not be the case with the Jewish people, and to this day they have never established a government of their own but have been in a scattered condition through all these years.

3. Why was this punishment placed upon them?

"Behold, the eyes of the Lord God are upon the sinful kingdom, and I will destroy it from off the face of the earth; saying that I will not utterly destroy the house of Jacob, saith the Lord," verse 8.

NOTE: God said He would destroy the kingdom, but would not destroy all the seed of Jacob. The kingdom has been destroyed because of the wickedness of the people, but the seed of Jacob are scattered the world over. They are in every nation on the globe.

4. Give one of their main sins.

"Thus saith the lord: Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the Sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem; . . . But they obeyed not, neither inclined their ear, but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, nor receive instruction," Jeremiah 17:21-23.

5. What would happen to the city of Jerusalem if they failed to keep the Sabbath?

"But if ye will not hearken unto Me to hallow the Sabbath day . . . then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched," Jeremiah 17:27.

NOTE: Sabbath breaking was the greatest sin the Jewish people were committing in that age of the world's history, and it was because of this that their chastisement commenced at the time it did.

6. What is said of the land of Palestine during the seventy years captivity?

"And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: to fulfill the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her Sabbaths: for as long . . . as she lay desolate she kept Sabbath, to fulfill threescore and ten years," II Chronicles 36:20, 21.

7. In what year did this punishment commence?

"Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north saith the Lord, and Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant, and will bring them against this land, and against the inhabitants thereof, and against all these nations round about, and will utterly destroy them, and make them an astonishment, and an hissing, and perpetual desolations," Jeremiah 25:9.

NOTE: The margin tells us this took place in or near the year 606 B.C. History gives about the same date.

8. After these people were scattered among the nations, what would they become?

"Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people," I Kings 9:7.

9. Commencing in the year 606 B.C. for how many years would they be severely punished?

"And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins," Leviticus 26:18.

10. How many days are there in three and one half times?

"And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times and half a time, from the face of the serpent," Revelation 12:14. Here we have a period of three and one half times. Verse 6 reads as follows, "And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore (1260) days," verse 6.

NOTE: In this prophecy we have three and one half times representing twelve hundred and sixty days (1260). Then we can very easily double this prophecy, which would make the seven times under consideration. This would equal twenty-five hundred and twenty (2520) days, the length of time the Jewish people would be scattered among all nations.

11. In the prophetic books of the Bible, what does one day represent?

"After the number of the days in which ye searched the land, even forty days, each day for a year, shall ye bear your iniquities, even forty years, and ye shall know My breach of promise," Numbers 14:34.

NOTE: If one day in prophecy represents one year, twenty five hundred and twenty days would represent twenty-five hundred and twenty (2520) years, or the length of time the Jewish people would be scattered among all nations. This great period of time commenced in or near the year 606 B.C., and counting down the stream of time twenty-five hundred and twenty years would bring us to the year 1914, and in this very year the great war broke out upon the world, which has brought about the fulfillment of many prophecies, some of which we will give as we proceed with this great study.

12. Concerning the Jewish people, what has God said of their re-gathering?

"And He shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth," Isaiah 11:12.

13. What does Jeremiah say on this same subject?

"Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven them in Mine anger, and in My fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely; and they shall be My people, and I will be their God," Jeremiah 32:37, 38.

14. Concerning this same subject, what does Joel say?

"The children also of Judah and the children of Jerusalem have ye sold unto the Grecians, that ye might remove them far from their border. Behold, I will raise them out of the place whither ye have sold them, and will return your recompence upon your own



head," Joel 3:6, 7.

15. Concerning this same subject, what is the teaching of Amos?

"And I will bring again the captivity of My people of Israel," Amos 9:14.

16. Jeremiah, in speaking on this subject presents a wonderful thought.

"Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together; a great company shall return thither," Jeremiah 31:8.

NOTE: We have given several scriptures concerning the gathering of the literal Jew, and many more could be given on this wonderful subject. God has seen fit to supply us with an abundance of scripture telling us when they were scattered, how long they would remain in this condition, and at what time they would be gathered again. Their twenty five hundred and twenty years ended in the year 1914 as we have already seen, and in that year the world war broke out upon the world. This war continued to grow in fierceness until the Holy Land was wrested from the hands of the Turks, which has cleared the way for the return of the Jews to their own land; the land that was promised to Abraham of old, and the movement is on foot in all the Allied nations, of giving the Holy Land to this people as a national home. After 2520 years of persecution they are wending their way homeward, and accepting Jesus Christ as their Savior. God has said: They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a Father to Israel, and Ephraim is My first born. Jeremiah 31:9.

### **The Gathering of the Jewish People**

NOTE: In the preceding lesson we have learned that the Jewish people were scattered among the nations of the earth as God said they would be. This chastisement commenced in the year 606 B.C., under Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, and the prophet said it would last for a period of twenty-five hundred and twenty (2520) years which would bring us down to the year 1914 A.D. In this year the World War broke out. With unrelenting fury it lasted for a period of over four years, and the climax having been reached, the way has been paved for the Jewish people to return to their own land; namely, the land of Palestine. In this lesson we will endeavor to find out if this gathering of the Jewish people is in accordance with the divine plan of God. If we find it to be the fulfillment of the prophetic word, we may know what to expect in the future, especially concerning this people and the land to which they are being gathered.

1. After the Jewish people had been scattered among the nations, what divine prophecy was given concerning them?

"And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the Lord hath blessed," Isaiah 61:9.

2. What is said of the gathering of this same people?

"Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven them in Mine anger, and in My fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and

I will cause them to dwell safely," Jeremiah 32:37.

3. In speaking on the same subject, what does the prophet Ezekiel say?

"And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one King shall be King to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all," Ezekiel 37:21, 22.

4. According to Joel, would the Jewish people be brought into their own land again?

"For, behold, in those days, and in that time, when I shall bring again the captivity of Judah and Jerusalem," Joel 3:1.

5. What reason is given for the gathering of this people?

"Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord God: I do not this for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for Mine holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went," Ezekiel 36:22.

6. As this people are being gathered to their own country, what will be their attitude toward God and His Son?

"Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together: a great company shall return thither. They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is My first born," Jeremiah 31:8, 9.

7. For whom will they be mourning?

"And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon Me Whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for Him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for Him, as one that is in bitterness for his first-born," Zechariah 12:10.

NOTE: This prophecy we find to be in the process of fulfillment at the present time. Many of the Jewish people that have gone to the promised land weep and wail for the crime their ancestors were guilty of, in causing Christ to be nailed to the cross, where He spilled His life blood. Today that blindness is being removed, and many of them are accepting Christ, the one whom they once hated, and it is in this way they are being led by the rivers of pure water. They are being sprinkled with the pure water, which is Christ, who is declared to be the water of life.

8. After this people have been gathered to their own land, will they be allowed to dwell safely?

"And I will cause them to dwell safely," Jeremiah 32:37.

9. Will they build the old waste places?

"And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations," Isaiah 61:4.

10. Will they have any assistance in this great work?

"And the sons of strangers shall build up thy walls, and their kings shall minister unto thee: for in My wrath I smote thee, but in My favour have I had mercy on thee," Isaiah 60:10.

11. When Christ comes to take charge of His kingdom, what will many of the Jewish people say?

"Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord," Matthew 23:37-39.

12. Together with the Jewish people, what will many say at the appearing of Christ?

"And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the Lord: we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation," Isaiah 25:9.

### Jerusalem

"City of Peace" a name resounding  
Throughout the earth.  
Prophetic voices now are sounding  
The coming glory of thy birth.

Down-trodden city of all past ages.  
Filled with the memories of the past,  
Revered and loved by poets, martyrs, sages,  
Thy present trouble shall be thy last.

From henceforth wear a crown of glory  
Even the glory of the world's "Great King";  
Now the first of all the earth in story,  
The world shall to thy gates its homage bring.

From thy down-trodden state there shall arise  
The future glory of a sinless world  
Peace within thy borders, no clouds upon thy skies,  
Upon thy walls the banner of the "Prince of Peace" unfurled.

Arise and shine, the glory of thy Lord  
Shall make thee noble, grand and free,  
And all that's promised in prophetic word  
Shall be fulfilled in thee.

"City of Peace" all that hope holds dear  
Is united to thy name. Thy Gethsemane  
Is past; thy God will cause thy glory to appear,  
Celestial light shall gild thy Calvary. -- J. A. Nugent

## The Gathering of the Jewish People -- Part 2

NOTE: In the preceding lesson we have learned of the scattering and regathering of the Jews, and also that at the appearing of Christ, this people will say "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord," There certainly are some reasons why this condition will exist at this time. One reason is, they are accepting Him as their Savior, and there is another reason which we will give in the study.

1. In what condition will the nations be at the second coming of Christ?

"And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear Thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth," Revelation 11:18.

2. At this time when the nations are angry, what thought will they have?

"Thus saith the Lord God; It shall also come to pass, that at the same time shall things come into thy mind, and thou shalt think an evil thought," Ezekiel 38:10.

3. With this evil thought in their minds, what will they purpose to do?

"And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates," verse 11.

4. For what purpose will they go up to the land of unwalled villages?

"To take a spoil, and to take a prey; to turn thine hand upon the desolate places that are now inhabited, and upon the people that are gathered out of the nations, which have gotten cattle and goods, that dwell in the midst of the land; And thou shalt come up against My people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days, and I will bring thee against My land, that the heathen may know Me, when I shall be sanctified in thee, O Gog, before their eyes," verses 12, 16.

5. What will Jerusalem become to these nations?

"And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it," Zechariah 12:3.

NOTE: By the above scriptures we are able to see why the Jewish people will say, "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord," This will be a great time of trouble. The nations will be gathered against the Jews and Jerusalem, for the purpose of taking them, and it will be then that the Jewish people which have accepted Christ will rejoice to see Him come. They will understand that His coming will be their only hope for safety, and the only chance for them to survive this, the greatest of all troubles.

6. How many nations will be included in this siege against Jerusalem?

"For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city," Zechariah 14:2.

7. How does Joel express the same thought?

"I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of

Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for My people and for My heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and parted my land," Joel 3:2.

8. At this time what will the Lord do?

"Then shall the Lord go forth and fight against those nations, as when He fought in the day of battle," Zechariah 14:3.

How prostrate lies before Thy radiant throne,  
Thy bleeding Israel, Thy dearest child;  
On whom Thy love and fairest fortune smile,  
When on the sacred ark Thy glory shone!  
Behold his anguish now within the zone  
Of bloody strife where craven legions wild  
In wanton spite the streets of Lemberg piled  
With heaps of bleeding flesh and splintered bone!

Oh, raise him from the dust and lead him home!  
His heart is pining on a foreign strand  
With yearnings for his promised, holy land.  
Restore Thy glory to the sacred clime,  
And he'll rebuild Thy house with golden dome,  
And sing Thy praises to the end of time -- From Maccabaeon, Sept. 1919



## Lesson 14

### The Last Generation

1. What does God say concerning the dispersion of the Jewish people among the nations of the world?

"I will persecute them with the sword, with the famine, and with the pestilence, and will deliver them to be removed to all the kingdoms of the earth," Jeremiah 29:18.

"For, lo, I will command, and I will sift the house of Israel among all nations, like as corn is sifted in a sieve," Amos 9:9.

2. How long a period of punishment was allotted to these people, including all the tribes of Israel?

"And if ye will not hearken unto Me [for all the previous punishment], but walk contrary unto Me; Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins," See Leviticus 26:27, 28.

NOTE: In Ezekiel 4:5 we read, "I have laid upon thee the years of her iniquity according to the numbers of days," This period of seven times, refers to seven years, or 2520 days. Each day for a year makes 2520 years allotted to them for dispersion and punishment. This began with the capture of Jerusalem by Nebuchadnezzar about 606 years before the birth of Christ, and therefore ended 1914.

3. What did Daniel the Prophet say about the time of deliverance of his people?

"There shall be a time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation, even to that same time, and at that time thy people shall be delivered, everyone that shall be found written in the book," Daniel 12:1.

4. What did he say further, as to the length of time it would be until the deliverance of His people should begin to be witnessed, and their period of chastisement end?

"And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred . . . and ninety days," Daniel 12:11.

NOTE: The period of time given here by Daniel, was 1290 days or years, until deliverance would come to his people. We note in verse two of this chapter, that the next event following their deliverance is that even many that sleep in the dust of the earth shall arise, showing that the deliverance will finally be complete. This span of 1290 years begins as the verse above states, "from the time the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up," As all Christians are to be watchful, there are none excusable for not knowing something about this prophecy, since it has a definite starting place.

5. What class of people will not understand this prophecy, and what does God say of those who do understand it? Into what distinguished class does He place them?

"The wicked shall do wickedly, and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand," Daniel 12:10.

6. As the commencement of the 1290 years of this prophecy starts with the taking away of the daily sacrifice, and the placing of the Abomination of Desolation, to what do these two events refer?

"But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sin every year . . . . And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifice, which can never take away sin," Hebrews 10:3, 11.

Much is said all through the Bible about the Old Testament law for pardoning sins, which was through the blood of animals. When a person broke any one of the ten commandments, he was stoned to death, unless an animal was killed in his place. This was to impress upon them the horrors of sin. Priests stood daily offering these sacrifices, and this is the daily sacrifice that was still going on in the days of the apostle Paul 66 years after Christ, as the above scripture shows. The Jews, not believing in Christ, the Lamb of God, who came and died for all who would accept Him, went right on offering up the animal sacrifices. This ended, however, when the Mohammedans by religion, or the Turks and Arabs, took possession of Jerusalem and the Holy Land in 632 A.D.

7. Did Jesus refer to these events as signs of His second coming?

"When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains," Matthew 24:15, 16.

NOTE: It is a fact that the year 632 marks the beginning of this period of Mohammedan conquest over Jerusalem and the Holy Land. It was this very year that Jerusalem fell, and then this desolating power STOOD there. The Jews fled to the mountains then, as they did when the Romans took Jerusalem in 70 A.D. This warning of our Savior fitted both events, and thousands now living in the low plain country of Judea will flee to the mountains again when the nations of the world gather to Palestine in the future.

8. Has there been more than one abomination in the sight of God, caused by Gentile armies coming against the Holy Land?

"And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate," Daniel 9:27.

NOTE: We see here that there were to be a series of abominations which would cause the Holy Land to be desolate UNTIL the consummation. This agrees with the words of Jesus in the same discourse when He said Jerusalem would be trodden down by the Gentiles UNTIL the times of the Gentiles were fulfilled, Luke 21:24.

It was the year 632 when these events took place and by adding the 1290 to this date, it brings us to 1922. It was this eventful year that fifty-three nations signed that memorable agreement giving the Jewish people the Holy Land. Any late encyclopedia will tell you about this, if you will look up "The Balfour Declaration." This was the most outstanding fulfillment of prophecy since the decree of Artaxerxes in the year 457 B.C., which pointed to the events of our Saviour's first coming. This is no less significant,



relative to His second coming.

9. Is there not another time period in connection with this prophecy, and what is said of the waiting time?

"Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days," Read Daniel 12:10-12.

NOTE: This waiting time is just 45 days, or just 45 years further. It reaches on from 1922 forty-five years, or to the year 1967. This goes into the kingdom, but does not give the date of Christ's coming, for Jesus said, "And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened," Matthew 24:22. Notice that this is during the same discourse, and just following His mention of the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, therefore it is these days that He refers to. This is the waiting time, or the last generation which we are in now.

10. What further did Jesus say about His coming during the waiting time, or the generation witnessing certain events happening here on the earth?

"Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; when they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled," Luke 21:29-32.

NOTE: In the verses preceding these quoted above, Jesus mentions Jerusalem being trodden down by the Gentiles with the Jews scattered among all nations UNTIL the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. Then He speaks of distress of nations, with perplexity, and men's hearts failing them for fear and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth. Then He compares these things to the leaves on the trees which show summer to be near at hand. When we see the leaves on the trees, He says we know of our own selves that summer is nigh at hand. "LIKEWISE YE, WHEN YE SEE THESE THINGS COME TO PASS, KNOW YE THAT THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS NIGH AT HAND." Also that the generation living then would not pass away until ALL was fulfilled.

11. How many years is a generation according to the scriptures?

"So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David to the carrying away into Babylon are fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ are fourteen generations."

NOTE: Here we have three periods of fourteen generations each, from Abraham to Christ, and this includes 1900 years. See dates given at the top of your Bible (most Bibles have them) in Genesis 18th chapter. It was also at this time when Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed by fire, which were set forth as examples of those that would afterwards live ungodly. Jude 1:7 and II Peter 2:6. Anciently, fire was put on a tall watchtower as a signal of approaching danger, Jeremiah 6:1.

Dividing 1900 years by the forty-two generations from Abraham to Christ, we have approximately forty-five years to a generation. This is the exact period of the waiting time in Daniel 12:12, as previously set forth in the 1290 and 1335 year periods.

Consequently, before this generation comes to its close Jesus will appear in the clouds of heaven in majestic power and glory, as He has promised. He said this generation would not pass away until all was fulfilled, therefore, we will not reach the end of it until the kingdom is here. Those days are to be shortened for the elect's sake.

Dear reader, we must use our life now for God, or it will be too late. We must put our means into the closing message of world-wide warning of the pending judgment. "Prepare to meet thy God, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand."

### **Russia in Prophecy**

1. In what terms do we have the nation of Russia mentioned in divine prophecy?

"Son of man, set thy face against Gog, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal, and prophesy against him," Ezekiel 38:2.

2. Where did the names of Magog, Meshech and Tubal originate?

"Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth, and unto them were sons born after the flood. The sons of Japheth, Gomer and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech and Tiras," Genesis 10:1, 2.

NOTE: If the student will turn to the map showing the divisions of the world after the flood, in the back of their Bible, they can readily see that Magog, Meshech, and Tubal, the grandsons of Noah migrated northward from Arabia and settled in the southern part of the territory now known as Russia. The introduction of the 38th chapter of Ezekiel given above is as follows, "Son of man, set thy face against Gog, the land of Magog," In the late translations of our Bible the word "Rosh" is used instead of Gog, from which the word Russia is derived.

3. What is said in the scriptures about this land of Russia?

"Behold I am against thee, O Gog, the land of Magog, and I will turn thee back, and put hooks in thy jaws," Ezekiel 38:2, 3, 4.

NOTE: The people of the present generation have been eye witnesses to the fulfillment of this divine prediction, and they have seen, during the late war, the turning back of this mighty power of the north. Russia, long known as the "bear of the north," has been turned back, and hooks have been put in her jaws. She has been reduced from one of the most powerful monarchical governments on earth to no government at all with only anarchy left.

4. What does God say further of Russia, and has she a future part to play in the last great drama of earth's history?

"I will bring thee forth, and all thine army, horses and . . . a great company . . . Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya with them . . . Gomer, and all his bands; the house of Togarmah of the north quarters, and all his bands, and many people with thee . . . . After

many days thou shalt be visited; in the latter years thou shalt come into the land that is brought back from the sword, and is gathered out of many people, against the mountains of Israel.

Thou shalt ascend and come like a storm, thou shalt be like a cloud to cover the land, thou and all thy bands and many people with thee . . . . And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages. I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates," Ezekiel 38:4-11.

NOTE: The above prophecy refers to the gathering of the armies for the last great battle, during which Christ comes, as is seen by reading the balance of this chapter. That this has no reference to the battle of Gog and Magog at the end of the thousand years spoken of in Revelation 20th chapter is evident from the fact that these armies come against unwalled villages, which have neither bars nor gates, while the battle at the end of the thousand years is when the wicked dead are resurrected and make an effort to take the holy city. The wicked hosts are spoken of in the Revelation of Jesus as Gog and Magog, which is correct. The wicked armies known as Gog and Magog that take so prominent a part in the battle of Armageddon, which comes at the commencement of the thousand years, only suffer the first death, and will constitute the armies marshalled together by Satan at the close of this period, after they are resurrected before the second death.

5. For more evidence that the power mentioned in this chapter refers to Russia, from what direction does God say these armies are to come when they march against His people who are gathered in the land of Israel, during which time He will rain fire and brimstone upon them and destroy them?

"And thou shalt come from thy place out of the north parts, thou and many people with thee," verse 15.

NOTE: Russia occupies the territory lying to the north of Jerusalem, so it is again made clear as to the identity of Gog.

6. At what time does verse 16 say this will be?

"It shall be in the latter days."

7. What other strong evidence contained in this chapter shows that this battle referred to is the one that takes place at the commencement of the one thousand year reign of Christ, and not at its close?

"Thus will I magnify Myself and sanctify myself, and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the Lord," verse 23.

NOTE: By this demonstration of God's power in the raining of fire and brimstone from heaven and shaking the earth with the mightiest earthquake known in history, God says in this way He will be magnified and sanctified in the eyes of many nations. This could not be if the events connected thereto were not at the time of the coming of Christ.

## Bible Organization and Service

1. What comparison does the Lord make with His church on earth, showing that it is an organized body, with all members working together?

"For as the body is one, and hath many members and all the members of that one body, being many are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him," I Corinthians 12:12-18.

2. Has the Lord placed governments in His church?

"And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healing, helps, government, diversities of tongues," I Corinthians 12:28.

3. What divine command was given to organize, or set in order the things that were disorderly, or wanting?

"For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldst set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city as I had appointed thee," Titus 1:5.

4. What is said about rendering honor to certain ones who have the rule over churches?

"Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine," I Timothy 5:17.

5. What command is given to the laity of the church respecting the ones in authority?

"Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you," Hebrews 13:17.

NOTE: Other references worthy of consideration are, Romans 12:8, and Hebrews 13:7, 24.

6. As everything needful to the church is outlined in the gospel, do we have a record of conferences where the leading brethren conversed together?

"And certain men which came down from Judea taught the brethren, and said, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question. And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them. But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses," Acts 15:1, 2, 4, 5.

7. In handling business problems for the general need of the body, do we have instruction to appoint committees?

"Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business," Acts 6:3.

8. Did not someone exercise the authority to call the disciples together in appointing this committee? Who was it, and were there many disciples that heeded the call?

"Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables," verse 2.

9. For what purpose was this committee of seven appointed?

"And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antioch," verses 1-5.

NOTE: There are some who misunderstand this scripture, thinking that it only applies to a distribution of money and necessities to the poor, but the word "widows" here refers to the wives of the apostles, and their families. The term "widow indeed" applies to women whose husbands are dead, without any near relatives to support them. See I Timothy 3:5, 16. The statement in verse one of Acts 6, that "when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmur of the Grecians against the Hebrews because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration," The cause given for the widows being neglected, was the number of the apostles increasing, showing that it was the wives of the apostles referred to and confirming much other evidence that this was the case. Brethren sold their possessions and laid the money at the apostles' feet, which was distributed among the wives and families of the ministering brethren, and this is the way the Church of God carries on its financial business today. They had a store house then where the surplus was held until distribution was made, and so there is now.

10. Did certain apostles exercise the authority to send evangelists to points from where calls came for help?

"Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John," Acts 8:14.

11. What is to be done with those who cause division and offense?

"Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them," Romans 16:17.

12. Should a brother or sister fall away, and do things that are not right in the sight of God, what is the course to pursue?

"How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray,

doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily, I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven that one of these little ones should perish. Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto them as an heathen man and a publican," Matthew 18:12 to 17.

13. If they refuse to hear those who have come to them, and also the church, then how is the church to treat such an one?

"But if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican," last part of verse 17.

NOTE: Notice that the church is to consider them outside, and not a part of the body. It is a church affair before God, and to have disobedient people not walking as they should in the church, causes others to also live loose, careless lives, as well as bringing reproach from the outside. The church officials should see carefully that all members walk worthy of their calling.

### **Hell, When and Where is It?**

1. What did Jesus especially say about Hell while He was on earth?

"And if thine eye offend thee pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched," Mark 9:47, 48.

2. Where is Hell further mentioned in the New Testament, as pertaining to the judgment?

"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened which is the book of life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them, and they were judged every man according to their works," Revelation 20:12, 13.

NOTE: It does not show justice on the part of God, to put people in a lake of fire, or a hot place known as hell, and leave them there for several thousand years, and then take them out and judge them. Therefore the place referred to in the above text cannot mean the lake of fire where the wicked go. All earthly courts of justice judge people before they punish them, and not afterwards. For us to suppose that the word "hell" in the foregoing text means a hot place of torture and misery, is to suppose that God inflicts punishment before people are even judged, as they are taken from hell to judgment. In such a case there would be many people who suffer the punishment of hell unjustly, if after having been there for a few thousand years, they would be judged and found innocent. As we do not hold such unjust actions as this against our loving Creator, some other

explanation must be sought.

3. Did Jesus go to a place called hell when He died?

"He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that His soul was not left in hell, neither His flesh did see corruption," Acts 2:31.

NOTE: As the word hell is descriptive of a place where the good people as well as the bad go at death, this explains how it is that people are taken from hell and judged, in the day of judgment. A careful study of this subject will reveal to the reader that in the two above cases the word "hell" refers to the grave, as it is taken from the Greek word "Hades," always rendered grave in the Greek. If you will note also in your own Bible, if it is a reference Bible, and most Bibles are, that this word is explained in the margin, as meaning the grave. Look in your own Bible at Revelation 20:13, where the word hell occurs, and see if there is not a small figure placed by the word. Then examine the reference in the margin and find this same figure, and you will see that explanation is given as meaning the grave. The same Greek word "Hades," is translated grave many times and in that language, from which our Bibles were translated. It is the word used, always, for our word "grave."

Notes on hell: The word "hell" is translated from three Greek words, viz., Tartarus, Hades, and Gehenna. Tartarus only occurs once in the original Greek text, from which our English was translated, and that is in II Peter 2:4, relative to the angels that sinned, being cast down to Tartarus, to be reserved in chains unto the day of judgment.

The Greek word Tartarus, means the regions just above the earth. It does not mean the same as Hades or Gehenna.

The word Hades, as previously mentioned, means the grave and nothing more nor less. Just as Jesus went there, and was resurrected from it, so are many people to be taken from this hell, the grave, and judged in the day of judgment.

The word Gehenna is used about twelve times in the New Testament, and the apostles and people to whom Jesus was speaking well knew that this was the name of the valley just to the south of Jerusalem, into which all of the carnage and filth of the city were hauled and dumped. It was where the carcasses of horses, mules, cows and sheep and all dead animals were taken as well as the bodies of transgressors and criminals. It is well known as the valley of Hinom and Gehenna. Here fires were kept burning day and night, one year following another, and this carnage and filth were burned. Many writers have given vivid descriptions of the place. They say around the edges worms were constantly consuming the flesh of animals and bodies of people, where the fire did not burn, hence the expression of Jesus "where the worm dieth not and the fire is not quenched." Jerusalem was a city of one hundred and sixty thousand people, with all lines of commerce carried by horses, mules and cattle. Therefore, a city so large without a sewer system, kept fires constantly burning to consume the refuse. Today, since Jerusalem is being restored, reports from there state the fires of Gehenna are again burning day and night. Look up the word "hell" in a Bible dictionary, or concordance and you will note quite a vivid description of this valley of Gehenna. The teaching of Jesus relative to people going to Gehenna only proves that the place to which He referred was a place of destruction, and not one of everlasting life in endless torture, as some try to infer.

4. Is there not a real hell fire of brimstone, into which wicked people are finally cast?

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death," Revelation 21:8.

NOTE: It will be seen that the real hell of the Bible is a hot place surely enough, and this book describes a hotter hell than most denominations believe in today. It teaches a hell so hot that it burns up and consumes everything that is placed in it. The Bible nowhere teaches that God fries, singes and burns people throughout all eternity, but the hell set forth in the Word of God is a place so hot that it devours the wicked, as will be clearly seen in the lesson under the heading, "The Punishment of the Wicked" [In Lesson 8]

### **Sinning Against the Holy Ghost**

In the first place we must know what is the Holy Ghost. Some suppose the Holy Ghost is one thing, and the Holy Spirit another. But the same word is translated as "Spirit." and "Ghost." The Holy Spirit is the better term, and is more easily understood. We find the Holy Spirit in existence before creation. "The spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters," Genesis 1:2. And again we find that if we are not born of the water and the spirit, we cannot enter the kingdom of God, John 3:5.

We are told to pray to the Father and the Son, but we have nothing in the Scriptures regarding prayer to the Spirit. We can pray to the Father through the Son, and He will send the Spirit, and is more willing to give it than earthly parents are to give good gifts to their children. The Holy Spirit is our regenerator, and the companion of every soul that believes in Jesus Christ, Matthew 12:31. We are told: "Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men." To blaspheme is sin. We may speak against the Son, and it shall be forgiven us, "but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world neither in the world to come," verse 32. In Mark 3:29 we read: "But he that shall sin against the Holy Spirit hath never forgiveness." The 30th verse tells us why: "Because they said He had an unclean spirit." They knew that His miracles were of God and that His words and teaching were of the Bible.

Other Bible texts on the Unpardonable Sin are: Genesis 6:3; Ephesians 4:30; I John 5:16; Hebrews 6:4 to 6; also 10:26 to 29. Last step is Matthew 18:16 to 18. The devil makes people who have been wicked believe they have sinned against the Holy Spirit, and therefore are without hope. This is his business, but there are very few who have ever been sufficiently enlightened in the word of God, or who have received the Holy Spirit to the extent to be in this condition.

If God is calling you to repentance there is hope, and dear one, do not give up, but call upon God, study His word, and have His saints pray for you. Drop a line to the publishers of this book, if you are concerned about this, and there will be a band of God's people pray for you, and you will be given further instructions how to be received of God. Our special work is praying for, and helping sinners to be relieved of the burden of sin, to



get nearer to God, and to know that God has received them. We are glad, willing and anxious to help you.

### **Danger in Rejecting Light**

1. How does God regard sins of ignorance?

"And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent," Acts 17:30.

2. To whom is sin imputed?

"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin," James 4:17.

3. In what words did Christ teach the same truth?

"Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see: therefore your sin remaineth." "If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak [Margin: excuse] for their sin," John 9:41; 15:22. See John 3:19.

4. In view of this, what instruction does He give?

"Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you . . . . While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be children of light," John 12:35, 36.

5. Who courts the light?

"Every one that doeth evil hateth the light . . . . But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God," John 3:20, 21.

### **Promises to the Overcomers**

1. What are we admonished to overcome?

"Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good," Romans 12:21.

2. What makes it possible for one to overcome the world?

"Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world," I John 4:4.

3. Is faith necessary in order for one to be an overcomer?

"For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith," I John 5:4.

4. In the Revelation of Christ what promises are made to the overcomers?

"To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God," Revelation 2:7.

"He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death," verse 11.

"To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it," verse 17.

"And he that overcometh, and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations," verse 26.

"He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before My Father, and

before His angels," Revelation 3:5.

"Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go no more out. And I will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, which is New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My new name," verse 12.

"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne," verse 21.

5. In what one promise are all these summed up?

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My Son," Revelation 21:7.

6. In days of old were all of these things understood?

"For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen. O God, beside Thee, what He hath prepared for him that waiteth for Him," Isaiah 64:4; see I Corinthians 2:9.

7. How were they revealed to the apostles?

"But God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God," I Corinthians 2:10.

### **Israel, Origin and Significance**

1. Upon one occasion in what do we find Jacob engaged?

"And Jacob was left alone; And there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day," Genesis 32:24.

2. In what way did Jacob prevail upon this man (or angel)?

"And he [the angel] said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he [Jacob] said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me," Genesis 32:26.

3. After prevailing upon the angel for a blessing, was he successful in receiving it?

"And he [the angel] said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel," Genesis 32:28.

4. Why was he given the name Israel?

"For as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed," Genesis 32:28.

5. What is the meaning of the word Israel?

Soldier of God, or overcomer.

NOTE: Here, we find, originated the word Israel, and it was given to Jacob, after he had proved to the angel that he had power as an overcomer. The word Israel itself, signifies an overcomer, or one who is the seed of Abraham through Christ. When Christ was on the earth, the Jewish people seemed to think, or believe, that they were the only people who had a right to be called Abraham's children. But Christ gave them to understand, that though they were the literal seed of Abraham, they were not the children, or true Israelites, unless they did the works of Abraham. In other words, by their fruits they would be known. If their fruits were good, they would be accounted for the seed. But if their fruits were bad, they were servants of Satan.

6. How did Christ answer the unbelieving Jews when they claimed to be the children of Abraham?

"Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham," John 8:39.

7. Upon one occasion how did John the Baptist talk to the literal Jew?

"And think not to say within yourselves, we have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham," Matthew 3:9.

8. And how did he compare them to an unfruitful tree?

"And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire," Matthew 3:10.

9. In what light did Paul understand this subject?

"Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel. Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but in Isaac shall thy seed be called," Romans 9:6, 7.

10. Are the children of the flesh counted for the seed?

"That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed," Romans 9:8.

11. In fact, who are the real seed of Abraham?

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, and to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed which is Christ," Galatians 3:16.

12. If we be Christ's, then whose seed are we, and to what do we fall heir?

"And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise," Galatians 3:29.

13. Who is the real Jew?

"For he is not a Jew which is one outwardly: . . . but he is a Jew which is one inwardly: and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God," Romans 2:28, 29.

14. Is it possible for flesh and blood to inherit the kingdom of God?

"Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption," I Corinthians 15:50.

15. How does Isaiah express himself concerning those to be saved with an everlasting salvation?

"But Israel shall be saved in the Lord with everlasting salvation: Ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end," Isaiah 45:17.

16. What determines whether one is a child of Abraham?

"Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham," Galatians 3:7.

17. In what scripture are Christians recognized as Israel?

"And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God," Galatians 6:16.

I saw a wayworn pilgrim  
In tattered garments clad,  
A struggling up a mountain

It seemed that he was sad.  
Upon his back a burden,  
His strength was almost gone,  
And praying as he journeyed,  
Deliverance to come.

I saw him in the evening  
The sun was wending low,  
He'd overtopped the mountain,  
And in the vale below,  
His eyes were looking forward  
As onward still he run,  
He shouted as he journeyed.  
By faith the victory's won.

I saw him in the morning  
When all the saints did raise,  
Still shouting out hosanna,  
To God in loudest praise.  
And then he glancing backward  
As o'er the path he'd come  
He shouted out more loudly,  
I see the victory won. -- L. O. Van Nostrand

## Lesson 15

### The Prophecy of Revelation 12

1. What was the great wonder seen in heaven at the opening of this vision?

"And there appeared a great wonder in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars," Revelation 12:1.

2. What other wonder next appeared antagonistical to the woman?

"And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads," verse 3.

3. What terrible deed did the dragon attempt to commit?

"And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born," verse 4.

4. What was the next event to transpire, and was the dragon successful in his attempt?

"And she brought forth a man child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God and to His throne," verse 5.

NOTE: The woman brought to view here represents the church in the dispensation of the birth of Christ. The church is spoken of as a woman in several places in the Bible, for instance in Matthew 25th chapter, in the parable of the ten virgins which represent the church, which is spoken of as the bride and Christ as the bridegroom. In Revelation 21:9, the church is again spoken of as a woman, calling it "the bride, the Lamb's wife."

As the sun is the ruler of the day and the expeller of all darkness, the woman being clothed with the sun symbolized the church which in this dispensation was clothed with light and truth, with all darkness and error eliminated and expelled. The symbol of the moon under the feet of the woman, or church, means that in this age the church had the moon, the ruler of night or darkness, entirely subdued and under control. The crown of twelve stars symbolize the twelve apostles of the gospel age which crowned the church. The child born to the woman or church was Jesus Christ, who was caught up to God and to His throne.

The dragon represented here is a type of pagan Rome, which held power with Herod as king of the territory in which Jesus was born. He made an effort to destroy Christ while He was a babe. Read the second chapter of Matthew where a history of this is found, and how Herod issued the command to slay all the children under two years of age. He is represented here by the Dragon. That a beast in symbolic prophecy represents a king or kingdom, review the lesson on "The Four Beasts" [In Lesson 12].

Study it carefully,  
Think of it prayerfully,  
Deep in thy heart let its pure precepts dwell.  
Slight not its history,  
Ponder its mystery,  
None can e'er prize it too fondly or well.

Accept the glad tidings,  
The warnings and chidings,  
Found in this volume of heavenly lore;  
With faith that's unfailing  
And love all-prevailing,  
Trust in its promise of life evermore.

### **The Beast With Seven Heads and Ten Horns**

1. What did John see in vision?

"And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy," Revelation 13:1.

2. What was the descriptive characteristic of this beast?

"And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion," Revelation 13:2.

NOTE: We see that this beast partakes of all the characteristics of the four beasts of Daniel the seventh chapter, viz., the lion, bear, leopard, and the beast with ten horns, amalgamated into one beast. The lion having one head, the bear one, the leopard four, and the other beast one, making the seven heads, and the last beast was the only one with horns, and it had ten, making upon this beast the seven heads and ten horns. See lesson, The Four Beasts on another page.

3. From what source did this beast receive its power and authority?

"And the dragon gave him power, and his seat and great authority," verse 2, last part.

NOTE: The dragon of the preceding chapter was the power that stood before the woman ready to devour her child as soon as it was born, and this was shown to be Pagan Rome that gave power and great authority to Papal Rome represented by this beast, with the seven heads and ten horns. It will be noted that the dragon could not have given something away that it did not possess, therefore in order for Pagan Rome or the dragon to give to this beast its seat, and power and great authority the dragon, beast, or Pagan Rome, would have to possess great power. By consulting the history of the world, we find that about the fourth century A.D. Pagan Rome gave to Papal Rome, its seat, power and authority, therefore we have here the transaction brought to view. And as Daniel in chapter seven said the fourth beast was the fourth kingdom to rule the whole world, and as it embraced all the territory occupied by the three beasts or empires preceding it, so here we have this beast symbolizing all of the territory controlled by the fourth world kingdom, the Roman kingdom. The seven heads, however, symbolize powers and events of a different and far reaching character.

4. What further was given unto this beast, or kingdom?

"And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies,

and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months," verse 5.

NOTE: This was the same period of time allotted to the fourth beast in Daniel seventh chapter. Forty two months at 30 days to the month (See Bible reading on Little Horn Power) equals 1260 days, or 1260 years. In Ezekiel 4:6 and other places in the word we have the instruction and example given to take each day for a year in reckoning prophetic time.

5. During the period of 1260 years what did this power do to the saints of God?

"And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them, and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues and nations," verse 7.

6. Everybody living on earth were going to worship him, except what people?

"And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world," verse 8. Those whose names are written in the book of life therefore will not worship the beast.

NOTE: Papal Rome is spoken of in all histories as the great persecuting power which continued to rule the whole earth for exactly 1260 years just as this prophecy said it should. The beast represents Papal Rome, which after church and state were united in the year 538 persecuted and put to death the true Christians by the millions. Some histories state that fifty millions suffered death as martyrs in almost every conceivable form, other historians put the number who were killed under the rule of this power to one hundred million. See Buck's Theological Dictionary, Encyclopaedia Britannica, the old family Bible, or any history of the middle ages, which will tell in detail of these facts. After the Catholic Church became united to the civil power, and the Pope was world pastor, the kings of the different nations made strict religious restrictions, and anyone not fully conforming to them was classed and punished as a heretic. This resulted in wholesale martyrdom, bringing to pass the prophetic prediction above, continuing the exact period of 1260 years until 1798 when, under Napoleon, Berthier captured and made the pope prisoner, unfurling the banners of Protestantism in the city of Rome and declaring Catholicism down forever.

### **The Woman Riding the Beast in Revelation 17**

1. Through whom did Jesus reveal this vision to John the revelator?

"And there came one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials, and talked with me saying unto me, Come hither," verse 1, first part.

2. After instructing him to come hither, what did the angel say he would reveal?

"I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters," verse 1, last part of verse.

3. When he was carried away in vision, what was seen?

"So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness; and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy having seven heads and ten horns," verse 3.

4. What was the character and apparel of this woman?

"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations, and filthiness of her fornication," verse 4.

5. What inscription was written upon the forehead of the woman?

"And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY BABYLON, THE GREAT; THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS; AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH."

NOTE: As this woman is contrasted with the woman of chapter twelve, we can easily recognize the symbolical application. The woman described in the lesson a few pages back symbolized the pure and Holy church, so in like comparison a vile and corrupt woman represents an apostate church.

As the beast brought to view in this chapter upon which this woman was riding, represents Papal Rome, as has already been shown, then to identify this church symbolized by the woman, we would be obliged to inquire after some church which had ridden upon the Roman Empire, controlling and forcing it into subjection. Only a very short research into history will reveal the fact that the Roman Catholic church is the only one mentioned, which has been thus united with the state and ruled the world. And it truly sat upon the affairs of the fourth universal kingdom which was Rome, and ruling her, caused to come to pass all that is spoken in the prophet's words related in the forepart of this chapter.

In the last part of verse 1, it is said that this "woman was riding upon many waters." Then in verse 15 we are told as follows, "The waters which thou sawest where the whore sitteth, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues," So the woman ruled great multitudes, nations and tongues.

6. Was this woman or church guilty of the blood of the saints, and what is said in this connection?

"And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus," verse 6.

NOTE: In the lesson preceding this one it was noted that the beast having the characteristics of the four beasts of Daniel 7th chapter, arose in the earth, made war with the saints and prevailed against them for 1260 years. And notice in particular that the dragon gave this beast his seat and authority. Going back to the lesson on chapter twelve of the woman which is a representative of the true church, we locate the great red dragon. This dragon attempted to destroy Christ as soon as He was born, but failed to accomplish his desire, and later gave up his seat and power and great authority to the beast brought to view in the next chapter (13). The dragon, and the beast here mentioned represent Pagan Rome and Papal Rome, and history records the transaction here referred to by the dragon giving up its power to the beast, as Pagan Rome surrendered and united fully with Papal Rome. Constantine with his many thousands of Pagan followers united with the Papal system. After this transaction was made, we have the same beast brought to view, with only minor changes, save that his color had changed from that of a leopard to scarlet or red. The amalgamation of Pagan Rome into Papal Rome changed the color to that of Pagan Rome, and likewise were false doctrines brought over from Paganism and thoroughly grafted into the practices of the Papal system, which at this time was beginning



to enforce her power universally. Then the vision could be properly given of this time 538 A.D., represented by the corrupt woman riding upon this Papal Beast, or the Catholic church riding and controlling the Roman world, which is a stern fact of history that cannot be dispensed.

Time and space forbids the balance of this chapter to be handled here, but in it are set forth some solemn facts of past history as well as signal warnings for the future. Truly, prophecy is a light that shines in a dark place, radiating the pathway of the Christian as nothing else can do outside of the assurance that he is firmly grounded on the Rock of His salvation, patiently awaiting the fulfillment of all that is promised. By Him shall we forever enjoy a haven of rest beyond the trials and turmoils of the present age.

Not by one portal, or one path alone,  
God's holy message to man is known,  
The storms beneath and the rainbow hues above.  
Herald His anger and proclaim His love,  
The still small voice of the summer day,  
The red sirocco, and the breath of May,  
The rolling thunder and the raging sea,  
Speak the stern purpose of the Deity.

### **The Third Angel's Message**

1. How many angels with special messages were seen in prophetic vision, before the coming of the Lord?

"And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead or in his hand," Revelation 14:8, 9.

NOTE: The book of Revelation contains many symbols and types, and we cannot expect that these were actual angels flying in heaven, but an angel represents a messenger, or a message. Many angels were shown to John when this wonderful book of Revelation was given, which gives rise to the expression, "And I saw another angel," (verse 9) when speaking of the first angel's message. It is a fact, however, that these three were special and verse nine speaks definitely of the last one saying, "the third angel followed them."

2. What is especially said regarding the voice proclaiming the warning message, which just precedes the end of the age?

"And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice . . ." Revelation 14:9, first part of verse.

3. What will be the fate of those who worship the beast, and disregard this special message sent of the Lord?

"The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb," Revelation

14:10.

4. What certain doctrinal belief distinguishes the ones who heed the warning from those who do not?

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus," Revelation 14:12.

NOTE: The church that carries the last message to the world must be one that teaches the binding force of the ten commandments of God, together with the faith and testimonies of Jesus. It is utterly impossible for any church which teaches that the commandments of God are abolished and nailed to the cross, to carry the last message to the world. The Church of God is the body of people called to carry forth this wonderful work, and there is no other church in the world with the special message of the Commandments of God and the testimonies of Jesus, which is sounding forth the warning against the beast power, taking up the prophecies and fully explaining their nature, and teaching people what the beast represents.

The commandments of God and the testimonies of Jesus, and not the testimonies of any common man or woman, make up the message, that goes to the world just preceding the coming of the Lord. This message must also carry with it the gospel of the kingdom, according to Daniel the prophet, that "In the days of these kings" the God of heaven would set up His kingdom.

5. When the last message is finished, which is a warning to the world against receiving the mark of the beast and his image, what is the first of the series of scourging plagues that torment the ones who disregard it?

"And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth. And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshiped his image," Revelation 16:1, 2.

NOTE: It will be noted that the last plagues cannot fall until after the Third Angel's Message is finished, as the first plague falls on the people who have heard, but refused to heed the warning of this messenger.

6. During this time, will not the ones keeping the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus, having the victory over the beast and his image, be protected and cared for under the power of the Almighty?

"And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God. And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying Great and marvelous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints," Revelation 15:1, 2, 3.

NOTE: We cannot take up one chapter of the Revelations after another as a series of events following in order, for they are not so arranged. Events follow in their order, always leading to the coming of the Lord and the judgment. This climax is often reached right in the middle of the chapter, and then other events are narrated that transpire along another line, but come in before the end is ushered in. It is this way with the 14th chapter. The 15th and 16th chapters, both narrate events that happen after the Third Angel's Message has gone forth, and then lead down to the battle of Armageddon, and the coming of the Lord.

7. What great event transpires following the Third Angel's Message, and also at the conclusion of the seven plagues?

"And I looked and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle," Revelation 14:14.

"Behold, I come as a thief, Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame," Revelation 16:15.

8. What similar events also follow in their order, found by comparing verses 19, 20 of each chapter?

"And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs," Revelation 14:19, 20.

"And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came into remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found," Revelation 16:19, 20.

9. Bible students agree that God has never sent destruction on the earth, or on any city without first preparing the people for it, by sending messengers and giving them warning. It was so with the flood, with the wicked cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, and what does the prophet Nahum say will be seen in the streets, when God is likewise preparing the world for the pending judgment?

"The shield of his mighty men is made red, the valiant men are in scarlet: the chariots shall be with flaming torches in the day of his preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken," Nahum 2:3.

NOTE: Attention is particularly called to the statement in this verse that chariots will rage in the streets, at the time of God's preparation. Today the work of preparing the world for the coming of the Lord is speedily going forth. The last message of warning is being sent out, and a select company of meek, obedient people are being called out of all churches, preparing themselves for translation when Jesus comes in glory.

10. What will also be included in the Third Angel's message, concerning churches that are following after the beast power?

"Come out of her, My people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues," Revelation 18:4.

11. By comparing verse 2 of this chapter with verse 8 of chapter 14, will it not be seen that these messages are identical, both describing the second and the third angels' message?

NOTE: There is no question; but, after a thorough consideration is given all texts concerned, that the First Angel's Message embraces the proclamation of the everlasting gospel in the apostolic age, which continues to the end. The Second Angel's message includes the great Protestant reformation which illuminated the earth with light and was a direct cry against the corruption of Babylon, while the Third Angel's Message sounds forth the final warning to the world, taking with it all accompanying light as yet unrevealed, preparing a people who will worship God "in spirit and in truth."

### **The Mark of the Beast**

1. What is the special message of the gospel that goes to the whole world just before the coming of the Lord?

"And the Third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, if any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God," Revelation 14:9, 10.

2. How do we know that this is the last message of the gospel that goes to the world, and what happens immediately after this message goes forth?

"And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown and in his hand a sharp sickle . . . . And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth and the earth was reaped," verses 14 and 16.

3. As the Third Angel's Message is directed against the mark of the beast, what is the beast?

"Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred three score and six," Revelation 13:18. NOTE: one score is twenty, therefore this number would be 666.

NOTE: The number of the beast being the number of a man, and his number being six hundred and sixty-six, it is with care that we investigate first the man who was closely associated with the beast power, during the 1260-year period, namely, the pope of Rome. In doing so, our suspicion is not in vain, for we find from the following sources, the name six hundred and sixty-six applying to him, thus the identity of the beast clearly ascertained, we can easily learn what his mark is, against which the Third Angel's Message is particularly directed.

We find upon the triple crown of the Pope the inscription as follows: VICARIUS FILII DEI. The numerical values of the letters in these words are:

VICARIUS -- V is 5, I is 1, C is 100, A and R have no value in the Roman numerals, I is 1, V is 5, and S has no value, making a total from this word of 112.

FILII -- F has no value, I is 1, L is 50, II is 2, or a value of 53 in this word.

DEI -- D is 500, E has no value, I is 1, or a value of 501 in this word, making a

total in the three words of exactly 666.

In the ancient Chaldean name of Italy, which was SATURNIA, Rome was called "The City of Saturn," The Chaldean numerals in the word Saturn give us the required number. See Chambers' Ency., p. 171.

SATURNIA -- S is 60, A has no value, T is 400; U is 6; R is 200, N, I and A have no values, making the total 666.

King Romulus built Rome 2,600 years ago, his name in Hebrew being ROMIITH.

ROMIITH -- R is 200, O is 6, M is 40, I is 10, T is 400 and H has no value, equaling 666.

LATEINOS (Latin man or church) -- L is 30, A is 1, T is 300, E is 5, I is 10, N is 50, O is 70, S is 200, equals 666.

The seventh day of the week stands as a monument of God's power, for it is repeatedly declared that He created the world in six days (Genesis 2:1-3, Exodus 20:8-10) and rested the seventh wherein He blessed and sanctified it. It is a memorial of His creation. He, therefore, says it is a sign between Him and His people forever, Exodus 31:17, 18.

His memorial continues through all generations, and stands fast forever and ever. As the 4th day of July is a memorial of the Declaration of Independence, so the seventh day of the week a memorial of God's creation. Keeping it shows obedience to God, and loyalty to Him, while disregarding it is sin and shows a lack of loyalty in our hearts. This is why it is a sign to God, and marks His people in the forehead which is the place of thought and memory, while the hand is what performs the labor, thus with our hands and minds we break or keep the true Sabbath.

### The Sign That Marks His Power

The following questions and answers are taken from Catholic books and papers.

Question -- Does the Catholic church acknowledge that it has changed the Sabbath?

Answer -- It does.

Q. -- How do you prove that the church hath power to command feasts and holy days?

A. -- By the very fact of changing the Sabbath into Sunday which protestants allow of; therefore they fondly contradict themselves by keeping Sunday strictly, and breaking most other feast days commanded by the same church. Abridgment of Christian Doctrine, by Henry Tuberville, D.D., of Douay College, France (1649), page 58.

Q. -- Have you any other way of proving that the church has power to institute festivals of precept?

A. -- Had she not such power, she could not have done that in which modern religionists agree. She could not have substituted the observance of Sunday (the first day of the week) for the observance of Saturday (the seventh day) a change for which there is

no scriptural authority. A Doctrinal Catechism, by Stephen Keenan, page 174, of Catholic doctrine.

"The Catholic Church of its own infallible authority created Sunday a holy day to take the place of the Sabbath of the old law," Kansas City Catholic, Feb. 9, 1893.

"The Catholic Church, . . . by virtue of her divine mission, changed the day from Saturday to Sunday," Catholic Mirror, official organ of Cardinal Gibbons, Sept. 23, 1893.

The above statements are taken from Catholic works printed and put out by that church, and they show plainly that the Catholics set Sunday up as a sign to mark their power and boast that they changed the day, which even exalts them above God Who blessed and set apart the seventh day of the week to commemorate His power in the creation of heaven and earth.

The first day of the week is nowhere mentioned in the entire Bible as a day of rest or worship. None of the patriarchs or prophets honored it in any way. The Catholic church keeps Sunday today, and they have always kept it since they commenced to do so, as they boast "Rome never changes." They compelled the whole world to keep it during the 1260 years of their rule, and killed everyone who would not do so, putting Sunday up in its place. This they boast of in their own books, and history also affirms it. [Review "The Crime of the Dark Ages".] Sunday stands, today, as a sign of their greatness. It is a mark everywhere apparent of the time when they ruled the world, and shows the extent of their rule and power, as the whole world honors Sunday. The Bible says the whole world wondered after the beast, Revelation 13:3, and this was true, for the light of the Third Angel's Message has not yet been heeded by many. As the true Sabbath is a memorial of God's great power in creating the world, so Sunday is a memorial to the world, of the past greatness of the beast and the church that sustained him and united with him. The Catholics boast of the fact that Sunday is a sign of their power. They say there is nothing in the scriptures for keeping it, but the Catholic church gave it to the world, and the world bows in obedience.

4. As chapters 12 to 18 inclusive, of Revelation are all devoted to this beast power, and of the consequences of worshipping him, or refraining from worshipping him, where is he especially mentioned further in these chapters?

The dragon in chapter 12 or Pagan Rome that tried to destroy Christ gives up its power and great authority to this beast (chap. 13:2, 4). In chapter 17 the beast is again brought to view with the woman (or church) riding it, wherein it is spoken of in verse 8 and 11 as the beast that was, and is not and yet is. The beast is a type of the Roman empire, and the woman (or church) symbolizing the Catholic church is riding upon and controlling it.

NOTE: The beast that was, as mentioned here, we can all see was the Roman Empire with the Catholic church riding upon it. The beast that is not, is the same. We are only now just coming out of the period when it was wounded, and was in the place of confinement or isolation. No nation or king has, during the past one hundred years until recently, honored the Pope in any way. We have been passing through the period when the beast was and is not. The eleventh verse of this chapter declares however, that the same

beast that was and is not, is yet going to be. It is marvelous today how rapidly this power is again coming to the front and gaining supremacy over the nations. Thirteen countries of the world have begun sending ambassadors to the Pope at Rome, since the close of the World War, and England is one of this number. The reviving of this same court that was described in the prophecies of the Bible, as a beast, is now not only seen coming, but it is here. It has not yet gained the power that it is seeking and will yet usurp and hold for a brief period, but within a few years the remaining prophecies of this chapter will be just as apparently fulfilled as all others in the past.

The message that has come to the reader of this book is going to the whole world. It is the Third Angel's message, and God is expecting each one to heed and obey the warning. If they continue, however, worshipping the beast, receiving his mark in their foreheads and hands, God will pour out upon them the dregs of the cup of his indignation, as in verses 10 and 11 of chapter 14. This is the warning message of the time. This beast can now be seen, as he marches forward and onward, but the victory is going to be won this time by the saints of the Most High, who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. This mark is going to be forced upon people in the future, and those who do not understand the consequences will submit to their eternal doom. Those who do understand will refuse to thus honor the beast and the church, and will stand with the people of God, who will be delivered in the final struggle, when God will arise to shake terribly the earth. Jesus is coming at the darkest period, and the most critical hour, and deliverance all over the world is promised to the faithful, who are keeping the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus. Chapters 14:12 and 17:12 to 14.

Reader be ready for that time by worshipping the only living and true God, and not the Pope of Rome.

The tragedy of death -- a world of strife  
Each day the world baptised in blood, war arrayed  
And man's mad passion with its toll of human life  
Man's better nature into devils hands betrayed,  
Such things must be before I come.

Each day brings something never known before,  
Each morn brings sights the world has never known,  
Each evening brings its terrors to deplore.  
Man's mad strife comes into its own.  
Such things must be before I come.

Kings do not rule -- there is a monster death  
Who sits on earthly thrones and he  
Counts human life as but a passing breath,  
Until each nation reaches its appointed destiny.  
With sights like visions of the seers of old the earth is filled  
With agents of destruction the earth, the sea, the air,  
By man's decree earth's rules, it is willed.  
With greed each seeks to grasp the other's share,

Such things must be before I come.

The kingdoms of the world each in its place,  
Its history, its life and destiny fulfills.  
Seeks to its own, knows only its own race.  
Not heeding that each exists only as God wills.  
Under its load of sin the world will linger on  
Until in time, God's plans shall be revealed.  
Nations as great, forgotten, passed and gone.  
The mightiest cities of ancient times by desert sands concealed.  
The earth in God's own time shall know.  
Abiding His time, its judgment sure to come  
Awaits a morn of blessing God will bestow. -- J. A. Nugent

### **The Battle of Armageddon**

1. What did Jesus say of the conditions that would prevail on the earth after His ascension?

"And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet," Matthew 24:6.

2. What did He say further about war?

"For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and pestilences and earthquakes in divers places," Matthew 24:7.

3. At the end of the present dispensation and just before Jesus is seen coming in the clouds of heaven, will there be peace on earth or distress of nations?

"And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations with perplexity: the sea and the waves roaring. Men's hearts failing them for fear and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory," Luke 21:25-27.

4. From the last testimony of Jesus 96 A.D., what does He say of the earthly powers just before the time comes for the dead to be resurrected, and the prophets to be rewarded?

"And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints . . . and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth," Revelation 11:18.

5. As the above evidence from the witnesses of God who have spoken upon this subject all agree that the coming of Christ, and the end of this age will be at a time of war, when the nations are angry, what is further said of the name and location of the last battle?

"And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. Behold, I come as a thief, blessed is he that watcheth . . . . And he gathered them together into a



place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon," Revelation 16:13-16.

NOTE: We note here the injunction, in the midst of these momentous events, "Behold, I come as a thief," so when this time is reached Christ is going to come quickly. It will be noted also in this account of the last battle, that the war is caused by the elimination of unclean spirits from the dragon, beast and false prophet. These are symbols of the three great false religious systems of the present time which will exist until Jesus comes: Paganism, Catholicism, and Mohammedanism.

6. Following the battle of Armageddon what are the next events in their order?

"And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air: and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. And there were voices and thunders and lightnings, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth . . . . And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found," verses 17 to 20.

NOTE: The location of the last battle as given in verse 16 is at a place called "Armageddon." The only place of this name now known in Geography is about fifty miles north and a little west of Jerusalem, Palestine. It is on the plains of Esdralon overlooked by the hills of Megeddo. This has in Bible history been the scene of many bloody battles, and there is here a small stream by that name, and also a village. The name dates far back into the annals of history and is supposed to have originated from the battle fought at this place by the Lord in defense of the Army of Gideon, where only 300 select men won a victory over many thousand of their enemy through the intervention of the power of God.

From various scriptural readings as well as of the fact that the word "Gideon" means "the sword of God," the battle of Armageddon carries with it the significance of the presence of the power of God, with all His angelical hosts, in defense of His people. At this time the power of righteousness will triumph victoriously over the monster sin in all of its varied forms.

7. What does Zechariah say about the location of the last battle of this dispensation?

"Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle," Zechariah 14:1, 2.

8. In the next verse of this chapter what does the Lord do at this time?

"Then shall the Lord go forth and fight against those nations as when He fought in the days of battle," verse 3.

9. Will Christ come during the time of this great conflict of the nations?

"And His feet shall stand in that day upon the Mount of Olives," verse 4, first part of verse.

NOTE: When Jesus ascended to the Father, the message of the angels to the apostles was, that this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven shall so come in like manner as ye have seen Him go. He ascended from the Mount of Olives, and when He returns this is the place where His feet will stand.

10. How do we know that this prophecy does not refer to the time of Christ's first coming, when He so often frequented the Mount of Olives?

NOTE: It will be seen from the following verse the first part of which is given above, that when the Lord's feet come upon the Mount of Olives, at His second coming, the mount divides asunder, and moves away. "And the Mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west . . . and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south," verse 4, last part.

11. Who will be king of the earth following this time?

"And the Lord shall be king over all the earth; in that day shall there be one Lord and His name one," verse 9.

12. What does God reveal to us through Ezekiel, regarding the location of the last battle, the nations involved in the struggle, and the victory?

"Son of man, set thy face against Gog, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal," (See lesson on Russia in Bible prophecy). "After many days thou shalt be visited: in the latter years thou shalt come into the land that is brought back from the sword, and is gathered out of many people, against the mountains of Israel, which have been always waste: but it is brought forth out of the nations, and they shall dwell safely all of them," Ezekiel 38:2, 8.

NOTE: It will be seen that the power above mentioned is to come against the mountains of Israel, which is the Holy Land and includes the mountains of Israel, which is the Holy Land and includes the mountains sacred to the Israelitish nations during their former history.

Notice particularly the statement, that it would be after many days, and in the latter years. Also this power is to come against a people that have been gathered out of many nations, and into a land that has been desolate but is now inhabited. This speaks in plain terms about the Jewish people, who are of the seed of Israel, and who have been scattered among all the nations of the earth, and are now being gathered back to the Holy Land, which had been truly desolated for many centuries. See previous lessons about Jerusalem, and also about the dispersion, and regathering of these people, to the mountains of Israel, where this battle will be fought.

13. What does God say He will do when Gog comes against the land of Israel?

"And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord God, that my fury shall come up in My face. For in My jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken. Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel. So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are upon the face of the earth, shall shake at My presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground. And I will call for a sword against him throughout all My mountains, saith the Lord God, every

man's sword shall be against his brother. And I will plead against him with pestilence, and with blood, and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire and brimstone," Ezekiel 38:18 to 22.

14. What will God accomplish by this miracle, when He destroys the armies that come against the people that are gathered at Jerusalem, and the land of Israel?

"Thus will I magnify Myself, and sanctify Myself, and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the Lord," verse 23.



## Lesson 16

### Universal and Age Lasting Peace

1. Will the cry of universal peace ever be a reality, and enduring peace be inaugurated permanently through peace conferences and a federation of earthly powers?

"For when they shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child, and they shall not escape," I Thessalonians 5:3.

2. What does Isaiah say about the ambassadors of peace?

"The ambassadors of peace shall weep bitterly," Isaiah 33:7.

3. What does the Bible say about a federation of nations and the final consequence?

"Associate yourselves, O ye people, and ye shall be broken in pieces . . . . Take counsel together and it shall come to nought," Isaiah 8:9, 10.

NOTE: We greatly realize that the efforts of man in the direction of perpetuating peace among nations is in this age a work commendable to the highest degree, and without which empires and kingdoms would be rent asunder, and anarchy would reign supreme. However, for persons to rely upon this as a means to a permanent end and to a full realization of all that God has promised, is wrong, and will sometime bring to them sorrow and disappointment. God has said in His Word that such will never be, until Jesus the Prince of Peace shall return to earth again to bring in lasting peace.

4. Are God's people to depend on the efforts of nations as a means of perfecting stable conditions on earth, or are they to be afraid in the evil day?

"Say ye not, A confederacy, to all them to whom this people shall say, A confederacy; neither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid," Isaiah 8:12.

5. Is there a time of peace spoken of in the Bible, when war will cease for a stated period, and which will be inaugurated by the efforts of man?

"And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree," Revelation 7:1.

6. What was the purpose for this period when the winds (or wars) would not prevail, nor molest the inhabitants of the earth?

"And I saw another angel ascending from the east having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea. Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads," verses 2, 3.

NOTE: It will be seen from Revelation the eighth and ninth chapters that there were to be great political upheavals among the nations during the consecutive periods from the time of Christ's ascension until He is to come again. These trumpets are all war signals, and the events recorded are largely in the past. At the sounding of the seventh and the final trumpet, Revelation 11:15, voices are heard in heaven saying the "Kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and His Christ, and He shall reign

forever and ever." According to revelation we must not look for enduring world peace until after the coming of Christ. See lesson on the Battle of Armageddon.

7. What does God reveal to us through the prophet Joel about the events of the last time, and the conditions of Judah and Jerusalem, just before the last great war?

"For behold, in those days, and in that time, when I shall bring again the captivity of Judah and Jerusalem, I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehosaphat, and will plead with them there for My people and for my heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and parted My land," Joel 3:1, 2.

8. While the children of God's heritage are scattered among the nations, and His land is parted, what is the decree to the Gentiles?

"Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles; prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up; beat your plowshares into swords, and your pruning hooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong. Assemble yourselves, and come, all ye heathen, and gather yourselves together round about: thither cause thy mighty ones to come down, O Lord. Let the heathen be wakened, and come up to the valley of Jehoshaphat: for there will I sit to judge all the heathen round about. Put ye in the sickle for the harvest is ripe: come, get you down; for the press is full, the fats overflow: for their wickedness is great. Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the Lord is near in the valley of decision . . . . The Lord also shall roar out of Zion, and utter His voice from Jerusalem; and the heavens and the earth shall shake; but the Lord will be the hope of His people, and the strength of the children of Israel," Joel 3:9-16.

God reigns and rules the universe,  
All other powers must cease.  
Christ soon will sit on David's throne,  
And He will bring us peace.

This great peace cry goes out to all,  
But this is only man,  
For it will never come I know  
Till worked by God's own plan.

This great peace cry God said would come  
Just in the darkest days;  
And last till Christ would come again  
And change man's wicked ways.

And in His own good time He'll send  
His Son to David's throne;  
With peace that spreads o'er all the earth,  
And reigns from zone to zone. -- Mrs. Andy Bennett

## The Millennium

1. What two great events mark the beginning of the one thousand years of restitution?

"And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you; Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began," Acts 3:20, 21.

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years," Revelation 20:1, 2.

2. Will he be allowed to deceive the nations any more until the thousand years have expired?

"And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season," verse 3.

3. What particular reference is made to the martyrs among the dead, and their future work?

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years," verse 4.

4. Where will this reign be?

"And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth," Revelation 5:9, 10.

5. Have we other proof that this reign will be on the earth?

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him," Daniel 7:27.

6. What promise was given to Mary by the angel?

"He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord shall give unto Him the throne of His father David," Luke 1:32.

7. What condition will exist during the Millennium?

"And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more," Isaiah 2:4.

8. What is said of the knowledge of the Lord during this age?

"They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea," Isaiah 11:9.

9. Will houses be built, and vineyards planted during this age?

"And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them," Isaiah 65:21.

10. Will they build and another inhabit, or will they long enjoy the work of their

hands?

"They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of My people, and Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands," Isaiah 65:22.

11. During this time, what will be the condition of the Holy Land?

"For the Lord shall comfort Zion: He will comfort all her waste places; and He will make her wilderness like Eden and her desert like the garden of the Lord; joy and gladness shall be found therein, thanksgiving, and the voice of melody," Isaiah 51:3. See also Ezekiel 36:35.

NOTE: Isaiah says of this time, "But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea," Isaiah 11:4-9. See also Isaiah 65:18 to 25 and Psalm 110.

12. What event marks the closing of the Millennium?

"And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison," Revelation 20:7.

13. After he is turned loose what is his mission?

"And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea," verse 8.

14. What will be the mission of this great throng of wicked people?

"And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city," verse 9.

15. While they are thus engaged what great calamity befalls them?

"And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them," verse 9.

16. What classes of people are included in this great destruction?

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolators, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death," Revelation 21:8.

17. What class of people will escape this great destruction?

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son," verse 7.

18. What event marks the completion of the millennial age?

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea," Revelation 21:1.

"The righteous shall never be removed: but the wicked shall not inhabit the earth,"



Proverbs 10:30.

19. And what great voice did he hear?

"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things have passed away," verses 3, 4.

NOTE: How wonderful will be the great eternity, and how glorious will be the time when God shall dwell among men? Each one should do every thing in their power; they should be willing to make any sacrifice they are called upon to make in order to have part in the great eternity, when all tears shall be wiped away from our eyes. And as Isaiah has said, "The inhabitant shall not say, I am sick," Isaiah 33:24.

Be of good cheer, ye friends of Jesus;  
Never succumb to doubts and fears,  
Cherish the great and precious promise,  
To reign with Christ a thousand years.

To reign a thousand years with Jesus  
Free from all trials, toils and tears,  
This is the Father's precious promise,  
To reign with Christ a thousand years.

Tell the whole world these blessed tidings:  
Speak of the time of bliss that nears:  
Tell the oppressed of every nation,  
Jubilee lasts through endless years.

Through endless years earth's coming glory,  
'Tis the glad day so long foretold:  
'Tis the bright morn of Zion's glory,  
Prophets foresaw in times of old.

## The Open Grave

The truth of the resurrection has been forcibly illustrated by the following incident:

In the city of Hanover, Germany, is a grave known as "the open grave." It is that of a woman, an infidel German princess, who died over one hundred years ago, and who, on her death-bed, gave orders that her grave should be covered with a great marble slab, weighing perhaps a ton, surmounting solid blocks of stone firmly bound together with clasps of iron, with this inscription placed on the lowermost stone of the tomb: "This grave, purchased for eternity, must never be opened."

But no human device can thwart the plans of God, or hinder the workings of life from Him. It happened, providentially no doubt, that a birch-tree seed was buried with the

princess. Soon it began to sprout. Its tiny shoot, soft and pliable at first, found its way up through the ponderous stones of the massive masonry.

Slowly and imperceptibly, but with irresistible power, it grew, until at last, it burst the bands of iron asunder, and opened this never-to-be-opened grave, leaving not a single stone in its original position.

What a rebuke to infidelity! and what a mute but striking promise that, ere long, in God's own time, all graves shall be opened, and the sleeping ones awake from their dusty beds!

\* \* \* \* \*

Then should the earth's old pillars shake,  
And all the wheels of nature break,  
My steadfast soul would fear no more  
Than solid rocks when billows roar.

O for a strong, a lasting faith,  
To rest on what the Almighty saith!  
To heed the message of His Son,  
And call the joys of heaven my own.

### **Daniel and His Trial**

Daniel was forbidden by unjust laws which were contrary to what God had said, to ask a petition from anyone for thirty days except from king Darius. Knowing well his books, and being versed in the word of God, he heeded not the voice even of the king who spoke averse to his Heavenly Father, so he continued offering his prayers three times each day while the windows were open toward Jerusalem. He was reported, and arrested, but continued to trust his God, and was then put into the lion's den to be devoured, but God sent His angel and delivered him. [See Daniel chapter 6.]

### **Death in the Kitchen -- The Clean and the Unclean Food**

1. Were there some beasts on earth before the flood that were not clean for food?

"Of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female," Genesis 7:2.

2. How did God specify the beasts that were for food, and those that were unclean?

"These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is clovenfooted, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat," Leviticus 11:2, 3.

3. Is there also a difference between the fish and the fowls as to their being clean and unclean?

"Whatsoever hath fins and scales in the waters, in the seas, and in the rivers, them shall ye eat," Leviticus 11:9.

4. What does the Lord say specifically about the swine? Is it good for food, or is it unclean?

"And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you," Leviticus 11:7.

5. Does the Lord say anything about the unclean beasts being an abomination to those who eat them, or even touch them?

"They shall be even an abomination unto you; ye shall not eat of their flesh, but ye shall have their carcasses in abomination," verse 11.

6. What will happen to the abominable in the day of judgment?

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers . . . and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death," Revelation 21:8.

7. When the Lord comes with fire to judge the world, what will happen to those who eat swine's flesh?

"For, behold, the Lord will come with fire, and with His chariots like a whirlwind, to render His anger with fury, and His rebuke with flames of fire. For by fire and by His sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of the Lord shall be many. They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be CONSUMED together, SAITH the Lord," Isaiah 66:15-17.

NOTE: This plainly speaks of the future, when the Lord comes to judge the world. All who are found eating the swine's flesh are to be consumed. This plainly carries the law of the clean and the unclean through the gospel age, and it is found binding even at the day of judgment.

8. What does the Lord say about the priests (ministers) in the day when He consumes the wicked with the fire of His wrath?

"Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and the profane, neither have they showed difference between the clean and the unclean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them . . . Therefore have I poured out my indignation upon them; I have consumed them with the fire of my wrath," Ezekiel 22:26, 31.

9. Does the Lord make any distinction in the New Testament between the meats that were created to be received, and those that were not set apart by the Word?

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith . . . Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth," I Timothy 4:1, 3.

NOTE: Here we find a separation made between the meats. Some were created to be received for food, and the Lord speaks against those who command people not to eat the meat that was created to be received. He says it is "Sanctified by the word of God and prayer," verse 5. The word "sanctify" means set apart. Therefore, some meat is set apart by the Word of God and prayer, for food. Even before the flood, some beasts were

unclean and some were clean.

10. Is it not a fact that the Lord showed Peter all manner of beasts and creeping things, and commanded him to arise and eat?

" . . . He fell into a trance, and saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat," Acts 10:10-13.

11. Had Peter been in the habit of eating the unclean meat up to this time, and what did he say in answer?

"Not so, Lord; for I HAVE NEVER eaten any thing that is common or unclean," verse 14.

12. Was this vision of all kinds of beasts, and creeping things given to show Peter that he should eat anything he wanted to? This is what many preachers will tell us, but what does the Bible actually say?

"Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; BUT GOD HATH SHOWN me that I should not call ANY MAN common or unclean," verse 28.

NOTE: The Lord speaks quite differently here from what men tell us. They say this vision was to show Peter that he should not call any meat unclean and that we could eat anything we want. Notice particularly just what the scriptures say about it. "God hath shown me that I should not call ANY MAN (not beast) common or unclean."

More people die from eating pork every year than from war. A serpent-like worm called "trichinae" is in every hog. None are free from it, says late investigation. Fifty years ago, the U. S. government spent more than a million dollars to propagate a breed of swine free from this worm, but it was in vain. When once in the human body, it never can be eradicated, and the person's life is greatly shortened. Dr. James McNaught and Dr. Eugene Anderson report in the Journal of The American Medical Association that, "when once the meat is swallowed, each female worm begins to breed thousands of small worms, so little that for weeks they cannot be seen by the strongest microscope. They are so small that soon they work their way through into the bloodstream." These doctors secured portions of muscle from two hundred people who died in San Francisco. These separately they ground to a powder and artificially digested the powder into artificial gastric juice, just as is done in the stomach, until the young worms which will not digest could be counted. They counted from 20 to 3,800 in each of forty-eight dead people. That was, in just the portions of muscle they took for the experiment.

Dr. Hall, from the U. S. Department of Agriculture, and later in our national Public Health Service, says that post-mortem (after death) examinations prove that more than one fourth of all the people in Boston, Mass., are affected with these worms.

They all say that thousands of people die from trichinae (when it is supposed they die from most all common diseases), depending on where the worms lodge and begin their death work. Children and young people up to thirty are not so often dangerously affected, but above that age when glands do not function so strongly, trichinae win the battle and

begin to increase.

Cooking, in many cases, does not kill the eggs or larva. Having the pork in the kitchen is extremely dangerous to the family. Dishes, knives, bread, and other things are often in contact with where it has been, and eggs and larva are smeared around and get into food or drink. Eating cheese from stores and meat counters where it is cut by the same knife that has been used in cutting pork, will bring the death worms in the home, and into our bodies.

Dear friend, let us believe God. The meats He declared unclean are unclean, and by believing and obeying we will escape much suffering and sorrow.

### **The Atomic Bomb and the World on Fire**

1. Is the destruction of the two Japanese cities, Hiroshima, and Nagasaki, the first record we have of big cities being destroyed by fire and brimstone?

"Then the Lord rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven; and He overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground," Genesis 19:24, 25.

2. Why were these cities so completely destroyed by fire and brimstone?

"And the Lord said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come up unto me; and if not, I will know," Genesis 18:20, 21.

3. Had there been found many righteous people in these cities, would the Lord have destroyed them?

The Lord said, "I will not destroy it for twenty's sake . . . . I will not destroy it for ten sake," Genesis 18:31, 32.

4. What did the Lord say about Sodom and Gomorrah being set forth as examples to other cities that afterwards would live ungodly?

"And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly," II Peter 2:6.

"Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, and set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire," Jude 7.

NOTE: It is evident that we are now entering the period of destruction upon cities similar to that visited upon Sodom and Gomorrah. The world was shocked over the terrible destruction of two cities in Japan, which brought an abrupt close to World War II. Jewish scientists in the year 1932 were extracting this substance, or one very similar, from the Dead Sea, which they said at that time they believed was the fire and brimstone God rained upon Sodom and Gomorrah. It is a known fact that Sodom and Gomorrah, located in the valley on the bank of the Dead Sea, both sunk and were covered by the salty waters of that sea.

5. Has God a reserve supply of this unquenchable fire which He will use at the

appointed time to again punish wicked men, and destroy evil power and ungodly cities?

"And I will rain upon him, and upon his bands . . . an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone," Ezekiel 38:22.

"For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch," Malachi 4:1.

6. Is this burning day to be just one of twenty-four hours, or how long a time has the Lord appointed to do this purging and cleansing work with fire?

"But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. BUT, beloved, BE NOT IGNORANT of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day," II Peter 3:7, 8.

7. Where else do we find mention made of this one thousand year period to be given over to the judging of the world?

"And I saw thrones, and they that sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them . . . and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years," Revelation 20:4.

"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years," verse 6.

8. Where will these kings and priests reign?

"And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth," Revelation 5:10.

NOTE: It will be during this one thousand year judgment day that the example of Sodom and Gomorrah will again be seen, for they are especially set forth as examples of other cities to suffer the same fate. Whole districts and cities will be visited with fire and brimstone during this burning day, and the world will be on fire in various countries and districts, while others will be about as usual. During this judgment period, known as the age of restitution (Acts 3:19-21), the entire world will be cleansed by fire.

9. Will it be possible during this time for the great steel works, iron engines, and metal construction by man to be burned up?

"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works therein shall be burned up," II Peter 3:10.

NOTE: The substance they were extracting from the Dead Sea, as stated above, would burn steel and iron, turning it instantly into a gas.

## **The Holy Spirit, Gifts, and Manifestations**

1. What did Jesus say concerning the divine power that He was going to send for His followers, and how long was it to remain with them?

"And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever," John 14:16.

2. Who would send this Comforter, and by what other name is it spoken of?

"But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you," John 14:26.

3. Where does this Comforter, or Holy Spirit, from God dwell?

"Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" I Corinthians 3:16.

4. To whom does God give the Holy Spirit?

"And we are His witnesses of these things, and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him," Acts 5:32.

5. How willing is the Lord to give us the Holy Spirit?

"If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? . . . If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?" Luke 11:11, 13.

6. Did God's children in the Old Testament times also possess the Holy Spirit?

David prayed, "Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy Spirit from me," Psalm 51:11.

7. Was there a mysterious power that lingered in the bones of faithful Elisha after he was dead?

"And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of men; and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet," II Kings 13:21.

8. In order to be resurrected from the dead, is it necessary for the Holy Spirit to dwell in our bodies?

"But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you," Romans 8:11.

9. How is it possible for any man or woman, boy or girl, to obtain this priceless virtue from above?

"Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For everyone that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened," Luke 11:9-10.

10. What did the Lord promise His disciples that would give them power and wisdom for service in the gospel work?

"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth," Acts 1:8.

NOTE: The words Holy Ghost and Holy Spirit are used synonymously. In the Greek we find the same words, and they are identical. In each case it refers to that divine anointing power from above, which God sends into the life of every person who hungers and thirsts for righteousness and earnestly calls upon Him for this power. Notice Matthew 5:6.

11. Are there different gifts of the Holy Spirit, and what are these gifts?

"But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; to another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues," I Corinthians 12:7-10.

12. Will all of these gifts be manifest in the same person, or will different individuals in the church possess different gifts?

"Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet I show unto you a more excellent way," I Corinthians 12:29-31.

13. Will the true Church of God possess all of these gifts in the last days while they await the coming of the Lord?

"That in every thing ye are enriched by Him in all utterance, and in all knowledge . . . So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ," I Corinthians 1:5, 7.

"Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. Not everyone that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven," Matthew 7:20, 21.

"For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth," Ephesians 5:9.

"But the fruit of the Spirit is LOVE, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts," Galatians 5:22-24.

14. As love is mentioned as the first one of these manifestations, how is love associated in the gospel with obedience?

"For this is the LOVE of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous," I John 5:3.

"Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law . . . " Matthew 22:37-40.

NOTE: Jesus said that on these two commandments hung the whole law. How true this is. The first four of the ten commandments are expressly love to God, while the last six of them pertain to the relationship of love toward our neighbor. If we love our neighbor as ourself, we will not commit any of the offenses numerated in the last six of the ten commandments. But note that Jesus said the first and great command was to love God. Therefore, the first four commandments are of greater importance than the last six.

## **Church Organization and Government**

1. As God is the author of nature in all her perfection, and has set the heavenly



bodies in their perfect system of order, can we suppose that He has left His people in the earth without any instruction regarding system and order in the church?

"God is not the author of confusion," I Corinthians 14:33.

"Let all things be done decently and in order," I Corinthians 14:40.

2. When God set the church in order in the wilderness, what kind of an organization did He form? How many men were at the head of the church?

"There were the renowned of the congregation, princes of the tribes of their fathers, HEADS of thousands in Israel . . . These are those that were numbered, which Moses and Aaron numbered, and the princes of Israel, being twelve men: each one was for the house of his fathers," Numbers 1:16, 44.

3. Were there not also seventy men given appointment for special work in God's order for governing His people?

"And the Lord said unto Moses, Gather unto me seventy men of the elders of Israel, whom thou knowest to be the elders of the people, and officers over them; and bring them unto the tabernacle of the congregation, that they may stand there with thee," Numbers 11:16.

4. As the Lord established this system of government for His people through His servant Moses, did Moses prophesy that God would raise up another prophet like unto him?

"This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; Him shall ye hear," Acts 7:37.

5. Of whom did Moses speak, and was this fulfilled in Christ's birth and ministry?

"For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren . . . Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers," Acts 23:22, 25.

6. When Jesus came and reorganized the church, what form of government did He also set in order?

"And it came to pass in those days, that He went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God. And when it was day, He called unto Him His disciples: and of them He chose twelve, whom also He named apostles," Luke 6:12, 13.

7. Did He also choose seventy the same as Moses had done?

"After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before His face into every city and place, whither He Himself would come," Luke 10:1.

NOTE: We see from the above scripture that God has twice set His church in order here on the earth, once through Moses, and once through Christ.

In both cases God ordered twelve men placed over the spiritual affairs of his church, and also seventy others to assist in the government. Surely this is the best system of organization. It is divinely given and the only one found in the entire Bible. Instead of having one man as head of the church here on earth, God's order is to have twelve men, while Jesus is the head over all, and He directs from heaven.

8. How was the church further organized in the days of the apostles?

"Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business," Acts 6:2, 3; Philipians 4:15.

NOTE: There were also seven business stewards appointed in the Old Testament church organization.

9. Were there also overseers in the church organization under Moses, as well as under Christ?

Old Testament:

"And Joel the son of Zichri was their overseer. . . . and their overseer was Zabdiel, the son of one of the great men . . . The overseer also of the Levites at Jerusalem was Uzzi," Nehemiah 11:9, 14, 22.

New Testament:

"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which He hath purchased with His own blood," Acts 20:28.

Paul says, "Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches," II Corinthians 11:28.

10. When there was a vacancy among the twelve apostles, was there an election held to vote for someone to fill the office, or did they simply cast lots in such cases?

"And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two Thou hast chosen, That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell," Acts 1:23-25.

11. In choosing by lot, who is it that makes the choice? Is it the people, or is it the Lord?

"The lot is cast into the lap; but the whole disposing thereof is of the Lord," Proverbs 16:33.

12. When men are thus chosen by lot instead of by a vote of the people, does it cause contention, or is it given to prevent strife in the church?

"The lot causeth contentions to cease, and parteth between the mighty," Proverbs 18:18.

## **The Passover and the Lord's Supper**

1. When was the Lord's Supper instituted, and of what did it consist?

"For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread . . . . After the same manner also He took the cup," I Corinthians 11:23, 25.

2. At what time of the year, and on what day of the month was the ancient Passover observed?

"Observe the month of Abib, and keep the passover unto the Lord thy God: for in the month of Abib the Lord thy God brought thee forth out of Egypt by night,"

Deuteronomy 16:1.

"And in the fourteenth day of the first month is the passover of the Lord," Numbers 28:16.

3. At what time of the day was the ancient passover observed?

"This month shall be unto you the beginning of months: it shall be the first month of the year to you . . . . In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb . . . . And ye shall keep it up until the fourteenth day of the same month: and the whole assembly of the congregation of Israel shall kill it in the evening," Exodus 12:2, 3, 6.

4. This lamb was a type of Jesus. When was He betrayed, and on what day of the month did He die?

"Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover . . . . Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed . . . . And He said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer," Luke 22:1, 7, 15.

5. Was not this the time that Jesus introduced the Lord's Supper?

"And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves . . . . And He took the bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is My body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of Me," verses 17, 19.

6. At what time of the year did the apostle Paul introduce the Lord's Supper to the church?

"For I have received of the Lord that which I also delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus, the SAME NIGHT in which He was betrayed took bread," I Corinthians 11:23.

7. As they killed the passover lamb on the fourteenth day of the first month, in the evening, what time of the day was this? Is the even according to the scriptures at the beginning or the end of the day?

"The evening and the morning were the first day," "The evening and the morning were the second day," Genesis 1:5, 8.

"From even unto even, shall ye celebrate your sabbath," Leviticus 23:32.

NOTE: The passover lamb was kept up until the fourteenth day of the first month and killed "in the evening," Exodus 12:6. Hence, it was killed at the beginning of the day, which was sunset, or just after the sun had set on the thirteenth, or the beginning of the fourteenth.

"Thou shalt sacrifice the passover at even, at the going down of the sun," Deuteronomy 16:6.

"And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto Him (Jesus) all that were diseased," Mark 1:32. Notice also Leviticus 22:6, 7.

8. Since there was some preparation made for the Passover in the Old Testament, and as the Lord's Supper takes its place in the New Testament, what preparations are people to make before partaking of the supper?

"Wherefore whosoever shall eat of this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord,

unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup," I Corinthians 11:27, 28.

"Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened," I Corinthians 5:7.

9. Did the church in the apostles' time keep the Lord's Supper at the time of the ancient Jewish Passover, as Jesus instituted it?

"For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us. Therefore let us keep the feast," I Corinthians 5:7-8.

"For I have received of the Lord that which I also delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread: And when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat, this is My body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of Me," I Corinthians 11:23, 24.

NOTE: The ancient passover was kept once a year, and so we have learned the Lord's Supper which took the place of the ancient passover was also kept once a year. According to all early church history, all professed followers of Christ kept the Lord's Supper on the fourteenth of Abib until the council of Nice in 321, when Constantine and others at this conference changed it to a certain Sunday which was the Sunday following the fourteenth of Abib.

The ordinance of humiliation wherein Christ taught His followers to be humble, and let the greatest be the servant is found in John 13. Jesus washed the apostles' feet and commanded us to do the same with one another. This was given as a step in preparation for the Lord's Supper.

## **About the Author**

**Andrew N. Dugger** (1886-1975) was the most famous Church of God, Seventh Day, leader in the twentieth century. He was born in Bassett, Nebraska.

Andrew N. Dugger's father, A.F. Dugger, Sr., had been an Advent Christian Minister. When commissioned by his church to do a study refuting the Sabbath, A.F. Dugger instead became convinced that the Sabbath should be observed. The result was a book he later published, called *The Bible Sabbath Defended*. For more than thirty-five years until his death in 1910, A.F. Dugger, Sr., was a leader in the Church of God, Seventh Day. His son Andrew, a school teacher and farmer, was in his early 20's when his father died.

A bright light in the sky around him seemed to Dugger to be a sign from God that he should follow his father's footsteps in the ministry. A.N. Dugger immediately sold his large farm and equipment, and went to the University of Chicago, where he majored in theology and public speaking, mastering Greek, Hebrew, and German.

Dugger periodically returned to Bassett to visit his mother and Effie Carpenter (1895-1980), a student of his whom he wanted to marry. Although he first proposed to her when she was sixteen, it wasn't until 1925 until they were married. They shared fifty years together.

Soon after college graduation, Dugger was invited by the Executive Committee of the Church of God to move to Stanberry, Missouri, to become editor of *The Bible Advocate*, a position his father had held before being forced to retire because of ill health. In 1914, Dugger arrived in Stanberry to begin his work in the ministry. For eighteen years he was editor, also serving as President of the General Conference. As field representative, he traveled widely, holding evangelistic meetings and public debates. The famous "Porter Dugger Debate," between Dugger and W. Curtis Porter, a Church of Christ minister, was later published as a book of over 230 pages. In 1919, Dugger wrote *The Bible Home Instructor*, which publicized the Seventh Day Church of God, and substantially increased its membership during the 1920s.

Two of Dugger's most adamant doctrinal positions were: a scriptural form of church organization with leaders chosen by lot rather than election, and a world headquarters in Jerusalem, Israel. After visiting Israel for only a year in 1931-32, Dugger returned to live in Sweet Home, Oregon. In 1936, A.N. Dugger and C.O. Dodd published *A History of the True Church*, which traces Sabbath-keepers from apostolic times to modern days. Dugger greatly influenced Herbert Armstrong, who was for years affiliated with the Church of God, Seventh Day, but later formed his own church, the Radio (later Worldwide) Church of God.

Dugger remained pastor at Marion, Oregon until 1953, when he and Effie settled permanently in Jerusalem, and launched the *Mt. Zion Reporter*. His aggressive leadership

resulted in thousands of converts around the world.

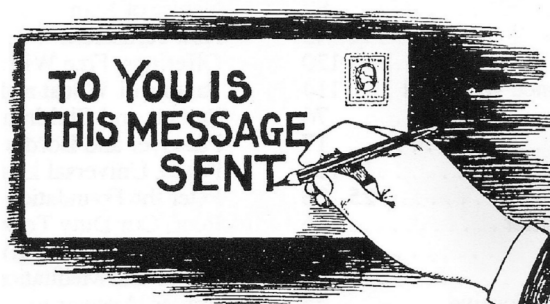
Andrew N. Dugger died in 1975 at the age of 89. Dugger's son-in-law, Gordon Fauth, continued the Jerusalem work at **Mount Zion Reporter, P.O. Box 568, Jerusalem, Israel.**



“WHOSOEVER  
KEEPETH THE WHOLE  
LAW, YET OFFENDS  
IN ONE POINT IS  
GUILTY OR AIL.”



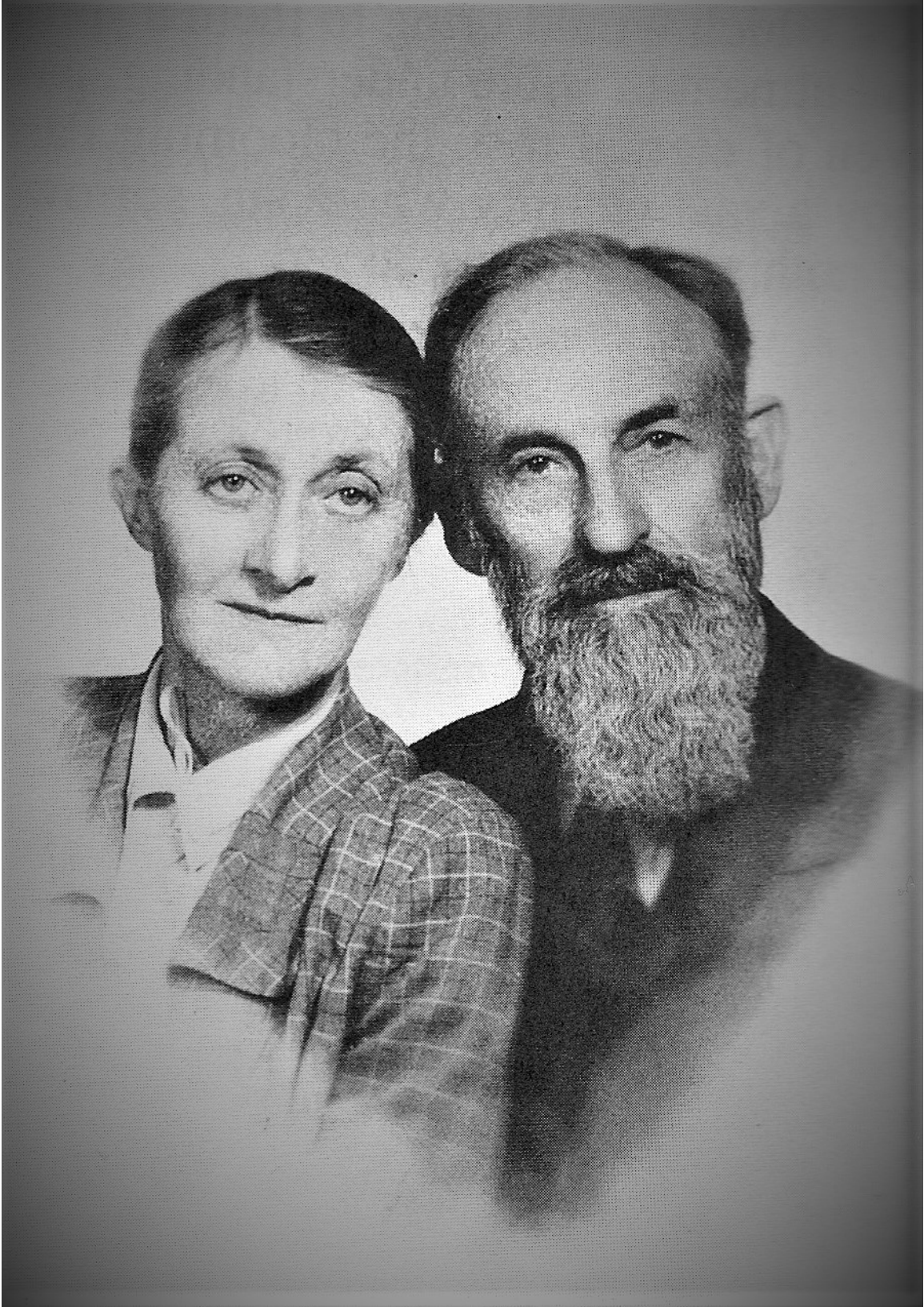
Which Is Baptism?



Preserved Line Drawings







**Andrew and Effie Dugger**